THE

ENGLISH HERMIT;

OR,

UNPARALLELED SUFFERINGS,

AND

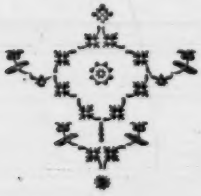
SURPRIZING ADVENTURES,

OF

MR. PHILIP QUARLL.

WHO WAS LATELY DISCOVERED ON AN UNINHABITED ISLAND IN THE SOUTH-SEA;

WHERE HE HAD LIVED ABOVE FIFTY YEARS, WITHOUT ANY HUMAN ASSISTANCE.



LONDON:
Printed for HARRISON and Co. N° 18, Paternoster Row.
M DCC LXXXVI.

L 859E

THE PREFACE.

TRUTH and *Fiction* have, of late, been ſo promiſcuouſly blended together, in performances of this nature, that, in the preſent caſe, it ſeems abſolutely neceſſary to diſtinguiſh the *one* from the *other*. If Robinſon Cruſoe, Moll Flanders, and Colonel Jack, have had their admirers among the lower rank of readers; it is as certain that the morality in maſquerade, which may be diſcovered in the Travels of Lemuel Gulliver, has been an equal entertainment to the ſuperior claſs of mankind.

Now it may, without the leaſt arrogance, be affirmed, that though this *ſurprizing Narrative* be not ſo replete with *vulgar ſtories* as the former, or ſo interſperſed with a *ſatirical* vein, as the laſt of the above-mentioned treatiſes; yet it is certainly of more uſe to the Public than either of them, becauſe every incident herein related is real matter of fact. But becauſe my ſhare in this work is no other than that of a bare Editor, I think it my duty to account for the poſſeſſion of this Manuſcript.

It was put into my hands, about a year ago, by Mr. Dorrington, an eminent merchant, with full liberty to publiſh it when, and in what manner, I thought moſt proper. I hope, therefore, it will not be deemed impertinent to give ſome account of my friend, as a reputation to the work itſelf.

Mr. Edward Dorrington is deſcended from a very ancient and honourable family in Staffordſhire. His grandfather, Mr. Joſeph Dorrington, removed out of that county, to Frome in Somerſetſhire; his employ was that of a very conſiderable grazier. The iſſue he left at his deceaſe was one ſon, Richard, (the father of my friend) and two daughters. Mr. Richard Dorrington, for ſome time, was a ſtudent of Gray's Inn; but liking a country life beſt, he having thoroughly qualified himſelf, retired to Frome, the above-mentioned reſidence of his father; where he married Mrs. Margaret Groves, of Taunton, a gentlewoman of about a thouſand pounds fortune. Soon after his marriage, he went and ſettled at Bath, where the integrity of his fair practice ſoon rendered him eminent in his profeſſion. He acquired a very competent eſtate, and died in the year 1708, having no other iſſue than his only ſon, the preſent Mr. Edward Dorrington, whom he had put to be bred a merchant, under the care of Mr. Stephen Graham of Briſtol. His diligence and courteous behaviour, during his ſervitude, ſo highly recommended him to his maſter's eſteem, that, when his time was expired, he admitted him into a moiety of his commerce, married him to his daughter, and gave her an handſome portion ſuitable to his merit.

The happineſs of my acquaintance with him began in his apprenticeſhip; and has, with the greateſt ſatisfaction to me, continued ever ſince.

As to the genuineneſs of this Treatiſe, I am farther to aſſure the reader, that as Mr. Dorrington is allowed, by all who know him, to be a gentleman of unqueſtionable veracity, and above attempting an impoſition upon the public; ſo the *firſt* Book herein was wholly written by himſelf, and the *ſecond* and *third* Books were faithfully tranſcribed from Mr. Quarll's parchment-roll, which was a continuation of what my friend had begun.

When Mr. Dorrington undertook this voyage, he ſet ſail, as is well known, from Briſtol to the South Sea; and traded all along that coaſt to Mexico, now called New Spain.

And he is now making a ſecond voyage to the ſame places.

To proceed to the Work itſelf. The *firſt* Book contains a relation of Mr. Dorrington's diſcovery of Mr. Quarll; his ſeveral conferences with him; a deſcription of the iſland, and the manner of our Hermit's living there; with many other curious particulars.

The *ſecond* and *third* Books are the contents of the Hermit's parchment roll above-mentioned; and contain the moſt ſurprizing, as well as various turns of fortune ever yet recounted in any work of this kind. And although the continued ſeries of misfortunes which attended him, ſeemed to render his life an example of the moſt unhappy ſtate of human nature; yet we do not find ſo great an enormity in his actions, that vengeance ſhould purſue him ſo cloſely by unparalleled croſſes. If polygamy could call down ſuch divine reſentments, we muſt be ſilent; nor farther urge his fate.

However, for this fact he was brought to juſtice by the laws of his country; and he accounts for the inducements of his committing that ſin at his trial. This reflection, therefore, ſhould be wiped off, ſince he is now become the humbleſt of penitents.

The obſervations throughout theſe ſheets will be found to be modeſt, ſerious, and inſtructive, and all centre in the unerring moral, that—

> Whate'er we do, or wherefoe'er we're driven,
> Still, we muſt own, ſuch is the will of Heaven.

To conclude. In the publication of theſe papers I have diſcharged two promiſes; the one made by Mr. Dorrington to the Hermit, and the other made by myſelf to Mr. Dorrington: and that they may meet with a reception, as candid as they are uſeful, is the hearty wiſh of

The Public's humble Servant,

P. L.

ON THE

HERMIT's SOLITUDE.

BEHOLD a man in his *firſt claſs* of years,
When youthful ſports made way for growing cares,
The chequer'd fortunes of a manly age,
Buſies reflecting ſenſe with thoughts more ſage:
Various affairs will cauſe a world of woes;
Then, in the fall of life, how ſweet's repoſe!
The calm, he now enjoys, makes full amends
For all he felt; Heav'n never ill intends:
Suff'rings are ſent to us from God above,
To make us practiſe faith and ſacred love;
Aw'd into patience by freſh ſcenes of fate,
We live too ſoon, and learn to live too late.
In buſy worlds, and trading peopled towns,
More faſt we ſin, than ſin itſelf abounds.
In ſoft repoſe, Quarll empires does diſdain;
Free from diſquiet, ſolitude's his gain.
Thoughts more ſublime, a haven more ſerene,
Nought e'er to vex him that may cauſe the ſpleen.
Methinks I with him ſhare of Eden's grove,
And wiſh no better Paradiſe to rove:
Here's not Ambition with her gaudy train,
Nor Envy trampling down the poor or mean;
Nor Avarice nor haughty Pride invade,
Nor can Remorſe his ſlumb'ring nights upbraid;
In peace he reſts, unenvy'd or unknown,
And pities monarchs on their toiſome throne.
No king that reigns, but muſt as mortals die;
And when they rule, no ſubject ſhould aſk, Why?
Heav'n grants them licence; and, when God gives laws,
Where's the bold man that dares diſpute the cauſe?
Would the great men from one ſo mean be told,
They ſerve a crown for int'reſt and for gold?
'Tis with content Quarll lives; he's truly bleſs'd,
Has nought to dread, nor is with aught diſtreſs'd;
Prays for his country, and it's preſent prince,
That he may reign in heav'n when call'd from hence.
Here, in theſe lonely ſhades, he juſt uproſe,
A type of reſurrection to diſcloſe;
A reſurrection from a watery hell,
Where ſhoals of terrors ſtrove which ſhould excel;
A reſurrection, emblem of the laſt,
Which will recal our ev'ry guilt that's paſt;
Drawing a glare of conſcience to our view,
Of horror for our ſins, both old and new:

But

But ſo unſpotted in his preſent ſtate,
I'd wiſh myſelf as happy; not more great:
I'd know no change; but, when God calls, obey,
Prepar'd in my account for judgment-day:
Then happy riſe from cares, and worldly toys,
To more ſubſtantial and eternal joys.
This honeſt HERMIT, at a tranſient view,
Seems to be born all precedent t' out-do:
Something uncommon makes him wond'rous ſeem;
Sound are his morals, drawn from ev'ry theme.
Thus from our Engliſh HERMIT learn to know,
That early piety oppoſes woe.
Thro' ev'ry ſtage of life ſee Philip toſt,
And on a deſart ſhore by tempeſt caſt,
Where he's moſt happy, when imagin'd loſt:
So true it is, the Gods our good deſign,
As lab'ring ſlaves dig diamonds from a mine.
From rugged rocks the ſailors gain a prize,
And, ſhipwreck'd oft, from death to life ariſe;
So may we at the laſt dread trumpet's ſound,
By true repentance here on earth, be found
Acceptable in heav'n, where joys abound!
In grateful hymns hail in the new ſpring-day;
And, like the angels, never ceaſe to pray.
A kingdom Quarll doth undiſturb'd enjoy;
He's rais'd a monarch from an abject boy.
And here I can't omit the pencil'd plan
Of Beauſdelle his monkey, and his man:
The docile beaſt moſt ſervilely obeys,
And juſtly merits more than human praiſe;
A beauty of his kind, good-natur'd too,
A brute ſo pleaſing, wonderful, and new;
Subſervient to his lord, loving and juſt:
Where's human ſervant we can thus intruſt?

THE

THE ENGLISH HERMIT.

BOOK I.

AN ACCOUNT HOW MR. QUARLL WAS FOUND OUT; WITH A DESCRIPTION OF HIS DRESS, HABITATION, AND UTENSILS; AS ALSO HIS CONVERSATION WITH THE PERSONS WHO FIRST DISCOVERED HIM.

HAVING concluded those mercantile affairs, which I undertook, by this voyage, to negociate; and being upon my return for England, and wind-bound; during my stay I daily walked about the sea-shore. Very early one morning, the weather being extremely fair, and the sea wonderful calm, as I was taking my usual turn, I accidentally fell into discourse with a Spanish Mexican inhabitant, named Alvarado: and, as we were viewing the rocks which abound in those seas, he desired me to take notice of a vast long one about seven leagues from shore, which he told was supposed to inclose some land, by it's great extent; but the access to it was very dangerous, by reason of the rocks, which reach so far under water, being in some places too shallow for boats, and in others too deep to ford over; and the sea, commonly very rough in that place, hitherto prevented farther research, supposing the advantage which might accrue from the land would not countervail the cost and trouble of making it inhabitable; for that he and some friends had on a fine day, as it now was, the curiosity to go as near as they could with safety, which was about fifty yards from the main rock, but were forced to return as unsatisfied as they went; only, that he had the pleasure of catching some delicious fish, which lay playing upon the surface of the water, having a rod in his hand, and lines in his pocket, being seldom without, when he walks on the sea-shore. These fish are somewhat larger than a herring in it's prime, skinned like a mackarel, made as a gudgeon, and of divers beautiful colours, especially if caught in a fair day; having since observed, that they are more or less beautiful according to the serenity of the weather.

The account he gave me of them excited my curiosity to go and catch some; and he being, as usual, provided with tackle, we picked up a parcel of yellow maggots, which breed in dead toutoises upon the rock, at which those fishes bite very eagerly.

Thus equipped with all necessaries for the sport, we agreed with a young fellow, one of the long-boat's crew belonging to the ship I was come over in; whose master being just come on shore, and not expected to return speedily, he readily consented to row us thither for about the value of a shilling.

Being come to the place, we found extraordinary sport: the fishes were so eager, that our lines were no sooner in but we had a bite.

Whilst we were fishing, the young man that rowed us thither, spying a cleft in the rock, through which he saw a light, had a mind to see what was at the other side; so put off his cloaths in order to wade to it: thus, having taken the hitcher of the boat, he groped along for sure footing, the rock being very full of holes.

Being come to the cleft, he crept through, and in a short time returned, calling to us with precipitation, which expressed both joy and surprize—"Gentlemen!

'men! gentlemen!' ſaid he, 'I have 'made a diſcovery of a new land, and 'the fineſt that the ſun ever ſhone on: 'leave off your fiſhing; you'll find here 'much better buſineſs.' Having by that time caught a pretty handſome diſh of fiſh, we put up our tackling, faſtened our boat to the rock, and ſo we went to ſee this new-found land.

Being come at the other ſide of the rock, we ſaw, as he ſaid, a moſt delightful country; but deſpaired going to it, there being a lake about a mile long at the bottom of the rock, which parted it from the land; for neither Alvarado nor myſelf could ſwim; but the young fellow, who could, having leaped into the water, finding it all the way but breaſt-high, we went in alſo, and waded to the other ſide, which aſcended gently, about five or ſix feet from the lake, to a moſt pleaſant land, flat and level, covered with a curious graſs, ſomething like chamomile, but of no ſmell, and of an agreeable taſte: it bore alſo abundance of fine lofty trees, of different kinds and make, which in ſeveral places ſtood in cluſters, compoſing groves of different height and largeneſs. Being come to a place where the trees ſtood in ſuch a diſpoſition as gave our ſight a greater ſcope, we ſaw, at ſome diſtance, a moſt delightful wood of conſiderable extent. The agreeableneſs of the perſpective made by nature, both for the creating pleaſure, and condolance of grief, prompted my curioſity to a view of the delights which the diſtance we were at might, in ſome meaſure, rob us of: but Alvarado, who, till then, had diſcerned nothing whereby we could judge the iſland to be inhabited, was fearful, and would not venture farther that way, leſt we ſhould of a ſudden be falliſ upon by wild beaſts out of the wood; and, as I could not diſcommand his precaution, the thickneſs of it giving room to believe there might be dangerous creatures in it; ſo we went ſouthward, finding numbers of fine trees, and here and there ſmall groves, which we judged to be compoſed of forty or fifty ſeveral trees: but, upon examination, we found it, to our great amazement, to proceed from only one plant, whoſe outmoſt lower branches bending to the ground, about ſeven or eight feet from the middle ſtem, ſtruck root, and became plants, which did the ſame; and in that manner covered a conſiderable ſpot of ground; ſtill growing leſs, as they ſtood fartheſt from the old body.

Having walked ſome time under that moſt ſurprizing and wonderful plant, admiring the greatneſs of Nature's works, we went on, finding ſeveral of the ſame in our way, wherein harboured monkeys; but their ſwift flight prevented our diſcerning their colours: yet, going on, we found there were two kinds; one having green backs, yellow faces and bellies; the other grey, with white bellies and faces; but both ſorts exceeding beautiful.

At ſome diſtance we perceived three things ſtanding together, which I took to be houſes: 'I believe,' ſaid I, 'this 'iſland is inhabited; for, if I miſtake 'not, yonder are dwelling places.'—'So they are,' ſaid Alvarado; 'and there'fore I don't think it wiſdom to venture 'any farther, leſt they ſhould be ſavages 'and do us hurt;' ſo would have gone back: but I was reſolved to ſee what they were, and perſuaded him to go on; ſaying, it would be time enough for us to retreat when we perceived danger. 'That may be too late,' ſaid he: 'for 'as evil doth not always ſucceed danger, 'danger doth not always precede evil; 'we may be ſurprized.'—'Well, well,' ſaid I, 'if any people ſhould come upon 'us, we muſt ſee them at ſome diſtance; 'and if we can't avoid them, here are 'three of us, a good long ſtaff with an 'iron point at one end, and an hook at 'the other; I ſhall exerciſe that, and 'keep them off, at leaſt till you get 'away: come along, and fear not.' So I pulled him along.

Being come near enough to diſcern better, we found, that what we took for houſes were rather arbours, being apparently made of green trees: then, indeed, I began to fancy ſome wild people inhabited them, and doubted whether it were ſafe to go nearer; but concealed my doubt, leſt I ſhould intimidate Alvarado ſo that he ſhould run away, to which he was very much inclined. I only ſlackened my pace, which Alvarado perceiving, imagined that I ſaw ſome evil coming, which he thought unavoidable; and not daring to go from his company, he only condoled his misfortune, ſaying, he dearly repented taking my advice; that he feared we ſhould pay dearly for our ſilly curioſity; for indeed thoſe things were more like thieves dens,

dens, or wild people's huts, than Chriſtians habitations.

By this time we were come near a ſpot of ground, pretty clear of trees, on which ſome animals were feeding, which I took to be goats; but Alvarado fancied them to be deers by their ſwift flight at our appearing: however, I inferred by their ſhyneſs, that we were out of the way in our judgment concerning the arbours; 'For,' ſaid I, 'if theſe were 'inhabited, thoſe creatures would not 'have been ſo feared at the ſight of men; 'and, if by nature wild, they would not 'graze ſo near men's habitations, had 'there been any body in them. I rather 'believe ſome hermit has formerly lived 'there, and is either dead or gone.' Alvarado, who to that time had neither heard nor ſeen any thing that could contradict what I ſaid, began to acquieſce to it, and goes on.

Being come within reach of plain diſcernment, we were ſurprized: 'If theſe,' ſaid I, 'be the works of ſavages, they 'far exceed our expert artiſts.' Their regularity appeared unconfined to the rules of art, and compleat architecture without the craft of the artiſt; nature and time only being capable of bringing them to that perfection. They were neither houſes, huts, nor arbours; yet had all the uſefulneſs and agreements of each.

Having ſufficiently admired the uncommon beauty of the outſide without interruption, but rather diverted with the moſt agreeable harmony of various ſinging-birds, as perched on a green hedge, which ſurrounded about one acre of land near the place, we had the curioſity to ſee the inſide; and, being neareſt the middlemoſt, we examined that firſt. It was about nine feet high, and as much ſquare; the walls were ſtraight and ſmooth, covered with green leaves, ſomething like thoſe of a mulberry-tree, lying as cloſe and regular as ſlates on a ſlated houſe: the top went up rounding like a cupola, and covered in the ſame manner as the ſides; from each corner iſſued a ſtraight ſtem, about twelve feet higher, bare of branches to the top, which were very full of leaves, and ſpread over, making a moſt pleaſant canopy to the manſion beneath.

Being full of admiration at the wonderful ſtructure and nature of the place, we came to a door which was made of green twigs, neatly woven, and faſtened with a ſmall ſtick, through a loop made of the ſame.

The door being faſtened without, gave us encouragement to venture in; it being evident that the hoſt was abſent: ſo we opened it; and the firſt thing we ſaw, being oppoſite to the door, was a bed lying on the ground, which was an hard dry hearth, very ſmooth and clean. We had the curioſity to examine what it was made of, and found it another ſubject of admiration. The covering was a mat about three inches thick, made of a ſort of graſs, which, though as dry as the oldeſt hay, was as green as a leek, felt as ſoft as cotton, and was as warm as wool; the bed was made of the ſame, and in the ſame manner, but three times as thick; which made it as eaſy as a down bed: under that lay another, but ſomewhat harder.

At one ſide of the room ſtood a table made of two pieces of thin oak board, about three foot long, faſtened upon four ſticks driven into the ground, and by it a chair made of green twigs, as the door; at the other ſide of the room lay a cheſt on the ground like a ſailor's ſmall cheſt; over it, againſt the wall, hung a linen jacket and breeches, ſuch as ſeamen wear on board; on another pin hung a large coat, or gown, made of the ſame ſort of graſs, and after the ſame manner, as the bed's covering, but not above half an inch thick; and a cap by it of the ſame: theſe we ſuppoſed to be a winter garb for ſomebody.

Having viewed the furniture of the dwelling-place, we examined it's fabric, which we could not find out by the outſide, it being ſo cloſely covered with leaves; but the inſide being bare, we found it to be ſeveral trees, whoſe bodies met cloſe, and made a ſolid wall, which by the breadth of every ſtem, we judged to be about ſix inches thick: their bark being very ſmooth, and of a pleaſant olive colour, made a mighty agreeable wainſcotting; the roof, which was hung very thick with leaves, was branches, which reached from end to end, and were croſſed over by the ſide ones that were woven between, which made a very even and ſmooth cieling, ſo thick of leaves and branches, that no rain could penetrate. My companion's uneaſineſs, expecting the hoſt's return every moment, hindered my examining every thing more narrowly; and, having ſlightly looked into the cheſt, which lay open,

wherein we saw nothing but sheets of parchment, which his haste would not permit me to look into, we went away.

Going out, we saw at one corner of the room, behind the door, a couple of firelocks, the sight of which much alarmed my company, and, I must confess, startled me; for, till then, I was inclinable to believe some hermit dwelt in the place; but finding arms in the room of a crucifix and religious pictures, which were the common ornaments of those religious men, made me waver in my opinion: and, having taken the pieces in my hands, which, for rust, appeared not to have been fit for use for many years, renewed my former opinion; supposing them to be the effects of some shipwreck, which the hermit found upon the rocks. But my company, persisting in their own, hastened out, and would have gone quite away, without seeing any more, had I not, by many arguments, made them sensible, that if those arms had been intended for the evil use Alvarado imagined, they would have been kept in better order; to which being obliged to acquiesce, he consented to go and examine the other, it being as worthy of admiration as that we had seen, though quite of another nature, but much of the same height and make.

The next we came at was covered all over with the same sort of grass as grew on the ground, which lay as even as though it had been mowed and rolled: behind it were several lodges, made, as it were, for some dogs; but we neither saw nor heard any.

Having viewed the place all round, we posted the young fellow with us at the outside, to give notice when any body appeared, lest we should be surprized whilst we saw the inside: so, having opened the door, which was made and fastened after the manner of the first, we went in, expecting to find another dwelling-place, but it proved rather a kitchen; there being no bed, but only a parcel of shells, of different sizes, which we supposed to be applied for utensils, some being scorched at the outside as having been on the fire, but exceeding clean within: the rest were, both inside and outside, as fine as nakes of pearl.

At one end of the room was a hole cut in the ground like stew-stoves in great kitchens; about three or four feet from that, there was another fire-place, made of three stones, fit to roast at; in both which places appeared to have been fire lately, by wood coals, and ashes fresh made. This confirmed my opinion that it was an hermitage. Alvarado, who all along feared we should meet with men who would misuse us, was not a little pleased to find fire-places in room of beds, and kitchen utensils instead of weapons. 'I hope,' said he, 'we are 'not in so great danger as I feared; here 'cannot be many men, unless they crowd 'together in yonder place; and, if so, 'they would have been here before now, 'had they been in the way.' His fears being in a great measure dispersed, we looked about more leisurely; and, seeing several shells, that were covered, on a shelf that lay cross two sticks that were stuck in the wall, which was made of turf, we had the curiosity to see what was in them; and found, in one, pickled anchovies; in others mushrooms, capers, and other sorts of pickles. 'Let them,' said I, 'be who they will that dwell 'here, I am sure they know good eat-'ing; and therefore, probably, may be 'no strangers to good manners.' Upon another shelf, behind the door, lay divers sorts of dried fishes; and upon the ground stood, uncovered, two chests with fish and flesh in salt.

These provisions being somewhat too voluptuous for an hermit, gave us room for speculation. 'I have lived,' said Alvarado, 'at Mexico these six years, 'and have been at Peru above twenty 'times, and yet never heard talk of this 'island: the access to it is so difficult 'and dangerous, that, I dare say, we 'are the first that have been on these 'sides of the rocks. I am very apt to 'believe, that a company of determined 'Buccaniers, which are said to frequent 'these seas, shelter here; and that the 'habitation we have seen, and this place, 'belong to their captain; and that the 'company resort in caves up and down 'these rocks.' Really I could not well gainsay it, being too probable; yet I would not altogether acquiesce to his opinion, lest he should thereby take a motive to go away before we had seen the other place. 'I must confess,' said I, 'here's room for conjectures, but no 'proof of certainty: however, let it be 'as you say, it is a plain case here are 'none to disturb us; therefore, whilst 'we have liberty, let us see the other 'place.' So we fastened the door as we found it, and went to the next, which

was

was ſhut after the ſame manner as the two preceding, but made of quite different ſtuff; being a compleat arbour, compoſed of trees, planted within a foot of one another, whoſe branches were woven together in ſuch a regular manner, that they made ſeveral agreeable compartments, and ſo cloſe, that nothing but air could enter; it was of the ſame height and bigneſs with the kitchen, which ſtood at the other end of the dwelling-place, which made a very uniform wing to it.

The coolneſs of the arbour removed our doubts of it's being another dwelling, unleſs only uſed in hot weather.

Having ſufficiently viewed the outſide, we went in, and found ſeveral boards, like dreſſers or tables in a pantry, on which lay divers broad and deep ſhells, as beautiful as thoſe in the kitchen, in ſome of which was butter, in others cream and milk. On a ſhelf lay ſeveral ſmall cheeſes, and on another a parcel of roots like Jeruſalem artichokes, which ſeemed to have been roaſted. All this did but confirm the opinion we were in, that it was no hermitage; there being ſufficient to gratify the appetite, as well as to ſupport nature. Therefore, not knowing what to think of the maſter of the houſe, we made no long ſtay, but concluded to haſte and get our fiſh dreſſed, it being near dinner-time; and as the trees ſtood very thick in-land, and might conceal men from our ſight till we came too near to ſhun them, we thought it proper to walk on the outſide, near the rocks, that we might ſee at ſome diſtance before us.

Walking along, a phlegm ſticking in my throat, I happened to hawk pretty loud; the noiſe was anſwered from I believe twenty places of the rock, and in as many different ſounds; which alarmed Alvarado, who took it to be a ſignal from men concealed up and down the rock, not conſidering the difficulty of their coming at us, there being a lake at the foot of it, which they muſt have been obliged to wade over, and which would have given us time to get away: but fear, which often blinds reaſon, repreſented the evil infallible to his thought, which was morally impoſſible. I did all I could to make him ſenſible they were but echoes; and, to convince him thereof, I gave a loud hem, which was anſwered in like manner, but by being a ſecond time repeated, and by a louder voice, I was certain the laſt did not proceed from me; which put me in apprehenſion that ſomebody beſides myſelf had hemmed alſo. My companion, whoſe countenance, being turned as pale as death, expreſſed the exceſs of his fears, would have run away, had not the voice come from the very way we were to go. 'Now,' ſaid he, (hardly able to utter his words for trembling) 'you are, I hope, 'convinced that it would have been 'ſafer for us to retire, inſtead of grati-'fying your unreaſonable curioſity: 'what do you think will become of us?' The young fellow, at theſe words, falls a weeping, ſaying, he wiſhed he had miſſed the getting of that money which was like to be dearly earned. I muſt confeſs, I began to be a little apprehenſive of danger, and wiſhed myſelf ſafe away, but concealed my thoughts, heartening them as well as I could; and repreſenting the danger equal, either moving forwards or ſtanding ſtill, I at laſt perſuaded them to go on.

We were ſcarce gone forty paces farther, before we perceived, at a conſiderable diſtance, ſomething like a man, with another creature, but preſently loſt them among the trees, before we could have a full view of them; which made every one of us conceive a different idea of what we had ſeen. Alvarado would have it be a giant and a man of common ſize with him, and both armed cap-à-pe. The poor lad, who was already as bad as a ſlave, being bound to a ſevere, ill-natured maſter, feared death more than bondage, ſo took what he had ſeen for ſome ſhe-bear, and one of her whelps with her, to make her yet more dreadful; and, by all means, would have thrown himſelf into the lake, in order to get at the other ſide of the rock: thus the danger appeared to each of them to be what they dreaded moſt; but I was ſomewhat better compoſed in mind than they. I gave the object I ſaw the likelieſt reſemblance the time it was in ſight would permit, which I could adapt to nothing but a man of common ſize, and ſomewhat like a dog with him; ſo perſiſting in my opinion, made them waver in theirs: thus we went on ſomething better compoſed.

Being gone about an hundred yards farther, we ſaw the ſame again, but nearer hand, and without interruption, the place being pretty clear of trees; thus having a full view, we were all, to our great ſatisfaction, convinced, that what

had been taken for a formidable giant, and a terrible she-bear, was but an ordinary man; but that which was with him running up a tree as soon as he perceived us, prevented our discerning what animal it was; but the man, who walked on apace, soon came within the reach of a more certain discernment, and appeared to be a venerable old man, with a worshipful white beard, which covered his naked breast, and a long head of hair, of the same colour, which, spreading over his shoulders, hung down to his loins.

His presence, which inspired respect more than fear, soon recalled the frightened folks scared senies, who, to recover this faint-heartedness, excused themselves by the misrepresentation distance causes in objects. The old man, who by that time, was come near enough to discern our speaking English, let fall a bundle of sticks he had under one arm, and a hatchet he carried in the other hand, and runs to me, being the next to him, embracing me, and saying—'Dear countrymen, for I hear you are Englishmen, by what accident are you come hither? A place, the approach whereof is defended by a thousand perils and dangers, and not to be come at but by a narrow escape of death. Are ye shipwrecked?'—'No, thank God,' said I, 'most reverend father; it was mere curiosity that brought us thither; these perils, which you say defend the approach of this island, being absent by the extraordinary calmness of the sea. But, if I may ask, pray how came you hither?'—'By the help of Providence, replied the good old man, 'who snatched me from out of the ravenous jaws of death, to fix me in this safe and peaceable spot of land. I was shipwrecked, thanks to my Maker! and was saved by being cast away.'—'I conceive, Sir,' said I, 'you have been chaced by some pirates, and escaped slavery by striking upon the rocks which surround this island; but now you have avoided that dismal fate, embrace the lucky opportunity of getting away from a place so remote from human assistance, which your age makes you stand in need of.'—'That's your mistake,' replied the old man; 'he who trusts in God needs no other help.'—'I allow that, Sir,' said I; 'but our trust in God doth not require us to cast away, or despise, the help of man. I do not in the least question your piety, but mistrust the frailty of nature, and debility of age; therefore would have you come and live within the reach of attendance. You may, without slackening your devotion, live in the world; you shall have no occasion to concern yourself with any cares that may disturb your pious thoughts.'—'No,' replied the old man, 'was I to be made emperor of the universe, I would not be concerned with the world again; nor would you require me, did you but know the happiness I enjoy out of it. Come along with me; and if, after you have seen how I live here, you persist in your advice, I will say you have no notion of a happy life.'—'I have, good Sir,' said I, 'already seen with great admiration, your matchless habitation; but there are other necessaries your age requires; as cloaths to exclude the injuries of the air, and meat suitable to the weakness of your stomach.'—'That is your mistake,' replied the old man, 'I want for no cloaths; I have a change for every season of the year; I am not confined to fashions, but suit my own conveniencies. Now this is my summer dress; I put on warmer as the weather grows colder: and for meat, I have fish, flesh, and fowls; and as choice as a man can wish for. Come, you shall dine with me, and ten to one but I may give you venison, and perhaps a dish of wild fowls too: let us go and see what Providence has sent us.' So we went to a wood about a mile farther, where he had fastened several low nets, in different gaps, in the thicket; in one of which happened to be an animal something like a fawn, twice as big as an hare, the colour of a fox, and faced and footed like a goat. 'Did I not tell you,' said the good man, 'I might chance to give you venison? Now let us look after the fowls.' So we went a little farther; at a place where he had hung a long net between two high trees, at the bottom of which was fastened a bag of the same to receive the fowls, who in the night, being stopped by the net, fluttered to the bottom. There also happened to be game; a couple of fowls, made like woodcocks, but of the bigness and colour of a pheasant, were taken at the bottom of a bag. 'Now,' said the old man, 'these I have without committing the sin of bidding less for them than I know they are really

Published as the Act directs Ayr Harrison & Co. May 6. 1816.

'really worth, or making the poulterers 'swear they coſt them more than they 'did. Well, now I may give you a diſh of 'fiſh alſo, it is but going half a mile or 'thereabouts.'—'There is no need, Sir,' ſaid I, 'for any more; there are but four 'of us, and here is proviſion for half a 'ſcore; but if you are diſpoſed for fiſh, 'we have ſome in a boat on the other 'ſide of a rock; it is but going for them.' —'Very well,' ſaid the old man, 'it is 'but going about a mile, then ſtrip and 'wade over a lake, then climb up a rug-'ged rock twice backward and forward, 'to fetch what we can have for only 'taking a pleaſant walk, all the while 'diverted with the ſweet harmony of a 'number of fine birds. Look here; 'this complaiſance often puts men to a 'world of needleſs trouble: come, we'll 'make a ſhift to pick a dinner out of 'theſe.'—'Sir,' ſaid I, 'it is no ſhift 'where there is ſuch plenty.'—'Plenty!' ſaid the old man, 'why, I tell ye, this 'is a ſecond garden of Eden; only here 'is no forbidden fruit, nor women to 'tempt a man.'—'I ſee, Sir,' ſaid I, 'Providence ſupplies you plentifully 'with neceſſaries, if age does not deprive 'you of ſtrength.'—'Age!' replied the old man, 'why I am not ſo old as that 'comes to, neither: I was but eight-'and-twenty when I was caſt away, and 'that is but fifty years ago. Indeed, 'if I lived as you do that dwell in the 'wiſe world, who hurry on your days 'as if your end came on too ſlow, I 'might be accounted old.'—'I do not 'gainſay, reverend father, but that you 'bear your age wonderful well; but a 'multiplicity of days muſt make the 'ſtrongeſt nature bend: yes, time will 'break the toughest conſtitution, and, 'by what you ſay, you have ſeen a con-'ſiderable number of years.'—'Yes,' replied the old man, 'a few days have 'run over my head; but I never ſtrove 'to out-run them, as they do that live 'too faſt. Well,' ſays he, 'you are a 'young man, and have ſeen fewer days 'than I, yet you may be almoſt worn 'out. Come, match this,' ſays he; with that he gave a hem with ſuch ſtrength and clearneſs, that the ſound made my ears tingle for ſome minutes after. 'Indeed, Sir,' ſaid I, 'you have 'ſo far out-done what I can pretend to 'do, that I will not preſume to imitate 'you.'—'Then I am afraid,' ſaid he, 'you will prove to be the old man.

'Well, then, you, or your friend, the 'ſtrongeſt of you, fetch hither that ſtone; 'it does not look to be very heavy,' pointing at a large ſtone that lay about two yards off. 'I will endeavour, Sir,' ſaid I, 'to roll it; for I dare ſay it is 'paſt my ſtrength to lift it.' So, to pleaſe the old man, I went to take it up; but could hardly move it. 'Come, 'come,' ſaid the old gentleman, 'I find 'that muſt be work for me.' With that he goes, takes up the ſtone, and toſſes it to the place he bid me bring it. 'I ſee,' ſaid he, 'you have exerted your 'ſtrength too often, which makes you 'now ſo weak: well, you ſee the ad-'vantage of living remote from the 'world. Had you had leſs of human 'aſſiſtance, I am apt to believe you 'would not want it ſo ſoon as you are 'likely to do. Come, let us make 'much of that little ſtrength we have 'left, taking neceſſary ſupport at pro-'per times; it is now paſt noon, there-'fore let us loſe no time, but haſte home 'to get our dinner ready.' So we went back to the place where the bundle of ſticks lay, which we made the young fellow with us carry, and went directly to the kitchen, where, whilſt he made a fire, one caſt the animal, and the other two pulled the fowls. 'I am ſorry,' ſaid the old man, 'you muſt take that 'trouble, but your preſence has fright-'ened away my ſervant, who uſed to 'do that work for me.'—'Have you a 'ſervant, then, Sir!' ſaid I.—'Yes,' ſaid he, 'and one a native of this iſland.' —'Then I find, Sir,' ſaid I, 'this iſland 'is inhabited.'—'Yes,' anſwered the old man, 'with monkeys and myſelf, 'but nobody elſe, thank God; other-'wiſe I can tell you, I ſhould hardly 'have lived ſo long.'—'Then, Sir,' ſaid I, 'I ſuppoſe that was it we ſaw 'run up a tree.'—'Yes,' ſaid he, 'my 'monkey, like myſelf, loves not much 'company.'—'Pray, Sir,' ſaid I, 'how 'did you bring him ſo well under com-'mand, as to keep with you when he 'has liberty to run away? I wonder the 'wild ones do not entice him from you.' —'I had him young,' replied the old man, 'and made very much of him, 'which theſe creatures dearly love: be-'ſides, when he was grown up, the wild 'ones would not ſuffer him amongſt 'them, ſo that he was forced to remain 'with me. I had another before this; 'but he, I may ſay, was ſent by Pro-'vidence,

'vidence, both to be an help and diver-
'sion to me; for he was so knowing,
'that he took a great deal of labour off
'my hands, and dispersed many anxious
'hours, which the irksomeness of my
'solicitude had created. It is now about
'twelve years since; for I keep a me-
'morial, which, indeed, I designed to
'have been a journal; but I unfortu-
'nately let the regular order of the days
'slip out of my memory; however, I ob-
'served a seventh day, and reckoned the
'years from winter to winter; so I can-
'not well mistake.

'One day, when I had roasted a quan-
'tity of roots, which I eat instead of
'bread, having spread them on my ta-
'ble and cheft to cool, in order to lay
'them by for use, I went out, leaving
'my door open to let the air in.

'Having walked an hour or two, I
'returned home, where I found a mon-
'key, whom the smell of the hot roots
'had brought; who, during my absence,
'had been eating. My presence very
'much surprized him, yet he still kept
'his place, only discontinued eating,
'staring me in the face: the unexpected
'guest at once startled me, and filled
'me with admiration; for, certainly,
'no creature of it's kind could be com-
'pared to it for beauty. His back was
'of a lively green, his face and belly of
'a lively yellow: his coat, all over,
'shining like burnished gold. The
'extraordinary beauty of the creature
'raised in me an ardent desire to keep
'him; but I despaired of ever making
'him tame, being come to his full
'growth: therefore, having resolved to
'keep him tied, I went in and shut the
'door. The beast, which, till then,
'had not offered to make his escape, ap-
'peared very much disturbed, and stared
'about him for some place to get out
'at. Perceiving his disorder, I did not
'advance, but turned my back to him,
'to give him time to compose himself,
'which he in a short time did, as appear-
'ed by his falling to eat again; which
'made me conceive hopes that I should,
'in time, make him familiar. Having
'about me stale roasted roots, which
'eat much pleasanter than the fresh,
'and are less stuffing, I threw some at
'him, at which he seemed displeased,
'and stood still a while, staring in my
'face; but my looking well pleased,
'which I believe the animal was sen-
'sible of, made him pick them up, and
'fall to eating with a fresh appetite. I
'was overjoyed at his easy composure;
'so reached him water in a shell, that
'the want of nothing might induce
'him to a retreat. I set it down as near
'him as I could, without disturbing
'him; he came to it very orderly, and,
'having drank his fill, he laid it down,
'and looked me in the face, carelessly
'scratching his backside: seeing he had
'done, I advanced, and took away the
'shell, at which he never stirred.

'The forward disposition of the beast
'towards a perfect familiarity, made me
'resolve to stay within the remainder
'of the day, no-wise questioning but
'my company would in a great measure
'advance it. So I made shift to sup
'upon a few roots I had about me, and
'went pretty early to bed; where I was
'no sooner laid, but the creature got
'across the feet, and continued very
'quiet till the next morning, when I got
'up; at which time he was also watch-
'ing my actions. I made very much
'of him, which he took very compos-
'edly, standing still to be stroaked.
'Then, indeed, I thought myself, in a
'manner, secure of him, and gave him
'his belly-full, as I had done the day
'before; but, having a pressing occasion
'to go out, I went to the door, thinking
'to shut him in till my return; but he
'followed me so close, that I could not
'open it without endangering his get-
'ting out, which, though he appeared
'pretty tame, I did not care to venture,
'our acquaintance being so very new;
'yet, as I was obliged to go, I did run
'the hazard; so opened the door by de-
'grees, that, in case the beast should of-
'fer to run, I might take the opportu-
'nity to slip out, and keep him in; but
'the creature never offering to go any
'farther than I went, I trusted him to
'go with me, hoping that, if he went
'away, the kind usage he met with
'would, one day or other, make him
'come back again; but, to my great
'surprize, as well as satisfaction, he
'readily returned with me, having
'waited my time: yet, as I had occa-
'sion to go out a second time, wanting
'sticks to make a fire, for which I was
'obliged to go near the place where
'most of his kind resorted, I was afraid
'to trust him with me, lest he should be
'decoyed by the others; therefore, hav-
'ing taken up a bundle of cords,
'with which I tie up my faggots, I

'watched

'watched an opportunity to get out, 'and leave him behind: but the beaſt 'was certainly apprehenſive of my de- 'ſign, for he always kept near the door, 'looking ſtedfaſtly at my bundle of 'cords, as deſirous of ſuch another; 'which I not having for him, cut a 'piece off mine, and gave it him; and, 'ſeeing I could not leave him behind, I 'ventured to let him go with me, which 'he did very orderly, never offering to 'go one ſtep out of the way; though 'others of this kind came to look at him 'as he went by.

'Being come to the place where I 'uſed to cut dry ſticks, having cut down 'a ſufficient quantity, I began to lay 'ſome acroſs my cord. The creature, 'having taken notice of it, did the ſame 'to his, and with ſo much dexterity and 'agility, that his faggot was larger, and 'ſooner made than mine; which, by 'that time, being large enough, and as 'much as he could well carry, I bound 'it up; which ſet him to do the ſame 'with his, which was abundantly too 'large a load for him.

'Our faggots being made, I took up 'that which I had made, to ſee how he 'would go about taking up his; which, 'being much too heavy for him, he 'could not lift: ſo running round it, I 'believe twenty times, he looked me in 'the face, as craving help. Having 'been ſufficiently diverted with the out-'of-the-way ſhifts he made, I gave him 'mine, and took up his: the poor ani-'mal appeared overjoyed at the ex-'change; therefore chearfully took up 'the bundle, and followed me home.

'Seeing myſelf, according to all pro-'bability, ſure of the dear creature, 'whoſe late actions gave me ſuch 'ground to hope from him both ſervice 'and pleaſure, I returned my hearty 'thanks to kind Providence for it's late 'prodigious gift; for certainly it was 'never heard of before, that, in a deſart 'place, one of thoſe wild animals, who 'fly at the ſingle appearance of an 'human creature, ſhould voluntarily 'give itſelf to a man, and, from the 'very beginning, be ſo docile and trac-'table. O! ſurely it was endued with 'more than natural inſtinct! for perfect 'reaſon was ſeen in all it's actions. In-'deed I was happy whilſt I had him; 'but my happineſs, alas! was not of 'long ſtanding.' As he ſpoke, I per-ceived tears in his eyes. 'Pray, Sir,' ſaid I, 'what became of that wonderful 'creature?'—'Alas!' ſaid he, 'he 'was killed by monkeys of the other 'kind, which fell upon him, one day, 'as he was going for water by himſelf: 'for the poor dear creature was grown 'ſo knowing, that if at any time either 'firing or water was wanted, I had no-'thing to do but give him the bundle of 'cords, or the empty veſſel, and he 'would ſtraight go and fetch either: in 'ſhort, he wanted nothing but ſpeech to 'compleat him for human ſociety.'—'Indeed, Sir,' ſaid I, 'I cannot blame 'you for bemoaning the loſs of ſo in-'comparable a creature; the account 'you give of him well entitles his me-'mory to regret: but I hope this you 'have now, in a great meaſure, makes 'up your loſs.'—'O! not by far,' re-plied the old man: 'indeed he goes 'about with me, and will carry a fag-'got, or a veſſel of water, pick a fowl, 'turn the ſpit or ſtring, when meat is a 'roaſting; yet he is nothing like my 'late dear Beaufidelle, for ſo I called 'that moſt lovely creature: beſides, this 'is unlucky; in imitating me, he often 'does me miſchief. It was but the 'other day that I had been writing for 'five or ſix hours; I had occaſion to go 'out, and happened to leave my pen 'and ink upon the table, and the parch-'ment I had been writing on cloſe by 'it: I was no ſooner gone, but the miſ-'chievous beaſt falls to work, ſcribbling 'over every word I had been writing; 'and, when he had done, he lays it by 'in the cheſt, as he ſaw me do what I 'had written, and takes out another, 'which he does the ſame to, and ſo to 'half a ſcore more; my return prevented 'his doing more miſchief: however, in 'a quarter of an hour, that I was ab-'ſent, he blotted out as much as I had 'been full ſix months writing. In-deed I was angry, and could have 'beaten him; but that I conſidered my 'revenge would not have repaired the 'damage, but rather, perhaps, added 'to my loſs, by making the beaſt run 'away.'—'Pray, Sir,' ſaid I, 'how 'came you by him? Did he alſo give 'himſelf to you?'—'No,' replied the old man, 'I had him young, and by 'mere accident, unexpected and un-'ſought for; having loſt both time and 'labour about getting one in the room 'of him I had ſo unfortunately loſt. 'The old ones are ſo fond of their 'young,

'young, that they never are from them, 'unless in their play they chace one 'another into the other kind's quarters, 'where their dams dare not follow 'them; for they are such enemies to 'one another, that they watch all op-'portunities to catch all they can of 'the contrary sort, which they imme-'diately strangle: which keeps their 'increase very backward, that would 'otherwise grow too numerous for the 'food the island produces; which is, I 'believe, the cause of their animosity.

'About eight years ago, which is 'the time I have had this beast, I was 'walking under one of the clusters of 'trees where the green sort of monkeys 'harbour, which being the largest and 'most shady in the island, I took the 'most delight therein: as I was walk-'ing, at a small distance from me this 'creature dropt off a tree, and lay for 'dead, which, being of the grey kind, 'made me wonder less at the accident. 'I went, and took him up; and, acci-'dentally handling his throat, I opened 'his windpipe, which was almost squeez-'ed close by that which took him, which 'my sudden coming prevented from 'strangling quite. I was extremely 'well pleased at this event, by which I 'got what my past cares and diligence 'never could produce me. Having 'pretty well recovered it's breath, and 'seeing no visible hurt about it, I ima-'gined that I soon might recover it 'quite; so hastened home with it, gave 'it warm milk, and laid it on my bed: 'so that with careful nursing, I quite 'recovered him; and, with good keep-'ing, made the rogue thrive to that de-'gree, that he has outgrown the rest of 'his kind.'—'No question, Sir,' said I, 'having taken such pains with him, 'you love him as well as his predeces-'sor.'—'I cannot say so, neither,' re-plied the old man; 'though I cannot 'say but that I love the creature: but 'it's having the ill fortune to be of that 'unlucky kind which was the death of 'my dear Beaufiddle, in a great mea-'sure lessens my affection. Besides, he 'falls so short, both of his merit and 'beauty, that I must give the deceased 'the preference: and, was it not for his 'cunning tricks, which often divert me, 'I should hardly value him at all; but 'he is so very cunning and facetious, 'that he makes me love him, notwith-'standing I mortally hate his kind. I 'must divert you, whilst dinner is get-'ting ready, with an account of some of 'his tricks.

'Being extremely fond of me, he 'very seldom would be from me, but 'followed me every where; and, as he 'used to go with me when I went to 'examine my nets, seeing me now and 'then take out game, he would, of his 'own accord, when he saw me busy 'writing, go and fetch what happened 'to be taken.

'One day finding a fowl in the net-bag, he pulled it alive as he brought it 'home; so that I could not see any 'thing whereby to discern it's kind. 'As soon as he came in, he set it down 'with such motions as expressed joy: 'the poor naked fowl was no sooner out 'of his clutches than it took to it's legs, 'for want of wings; it's sudden escape 'so surprized the captor, that he stood 'amazed for a while, which gave the 'poor creature time to gain a consider-'able scope of ground; but the astonish-'ed beast, being recovered from his sur-'prize, soon made after it, but was a 'considerable time before he could catch 'it, having nothing to lay hold of; so 'that the fowl would slip out of his 'hands. The race held about a quar-'ter of an hour, in which time the poor 'creature, having run itself out of 'breath, was forced to lie down before 'it's pursuer, who immediately threw 'himself upon it; so took it up in his 'arms, and brought it home, but was 'not so ready to set it down as before, 'for he held it by one leg till I had laid 'hold of it.

'I had a second time as good diver-'sion, but after another manner. One 'morning early, whilst I was busy in my 'cottage, he went out, unperceived by 'me; and, having been a considerable 'time absent, I feared that such another 'accident had befallen him as that which 'had happened to his predecessor; so I 'went to see after him; and as he would 'often go and visit the nets in the woods, 'I went there first, where I found him 'very busy with such an animal as this 'we have here, which he found taken in 'one of the gap-nets, and bein g nearly 'as big as himself, kept him a while 'struggling for mastership. Sometimes 'he would take it by the ears, now and 'then by one leg, next by the tail; but 'could not get him along: at last he 'laid hold of one of his hind legs, and

'with

'with the other hand ſmote him on the 'back, in order to drive him, not being 'able to pull him along, but the beaſt, 'being too ſtrong, ſtill made towards the 'thickſet, where he certainly would have 'hailed the driver, had I not come up 'to help him.' Thus the old gentleman entertained us with his monkey's tricks whilſt dinner was dreſſing.

The dinner being ready, we went to the dwelling-place to eat it, leaving the young fellow that was with us to attend the roaſted meat, while we eat the firſt diſh.

The old gentleman having laid the cloth, which, though ſomething coarſe, being made out of part of a ſhip-ſail, was very clean, he laid three ſhells on it, about the bigneſs of a middle-ſized plate, but as beautiful as any nakes of pearl I ever ſaw. 'Gentlemen,' ſays he, 'if 'you can eat off of ſhells, ye are wel-'come; I have no better plates to give 'you.'—'Sir,' ſaid I, 'theſe are pre-'ferable to ſilver ones, in my opinion; 'and I very much queſtion whether any 'prince in Europe can produce ſo cu-'rious a ſervice.'—'They may be rich-'er,' replied the old man, 'but not 'cleaner.'

The firſt diſh he ſerved was ſoupe in a large deep ſhell, as fine as the firſt, and one ſpoon made of ſhell, which he ſaid was all his ſtock, being not uſed to nor expecting company: however, he fetched a couple of muſcle-ſhells, which he waſhed very clean; then gave Alvarado one, and took the other himſelf, obliging me to make uſe of the ſpoon: ſo we ſat down, Alvarado and I upon the cheſt, which we drew near the table; and the old gentleman, though much againſt his will, upon the chair.

Being ſet down, we fell to eating the ſoup, whoſe fragrant ſmell excited my appetite; and I profeſs the taſte thereof was ſo excellent, that I never eat any comparable to it at Pontac's, nor any where before: it was made of one half of the beaſt we took in the morning, with ſeveral ſorts of herbs which eat like artichokes, aſparagus, and celery; there were alſo bits of roaſted roots in it, inſtead of toaſted bread, which added much to the richneſs of it, taſting like cheſnuts: but, what ſurpriſed me moſt, there were green peaſe in it, whoſe extraordinary ſweetneſs was diſcernible from every other ingredient. 'Pity,' ſaid I, 'the 'acceſs to this iſland is ſo difficult; what 'a bleſſed ſpot of land would it make, 'were it but inhabited! Here naturally 'grows what in Europe we plow, till, 'and labour hard for.'—'You ſay,' replied the old man, 'this would be a bleſ-'ed ſpot of ground, if it was inhabited.' 'Now I am quite of another opinion; 'for I think it's bleſſing conſiſts in it's 'not being inhabited, being free of thoſe 'curſes your populous and celebrated 'cities abound in; here's nothing but 'praiſes and thankſgivings heard: and 'as for Nature beſtowing freely, and of 'her own accord, what in Europe you 'are obliged, by induſtry and hard la-'bour, in a manner to force from her, 'wonder not at. Conſider how much 'you daily rob her of her due, and 'charge her with ſlander and calumny. 'Don't you frequently ſay, if a man is 'addicted to any vice, that it is his na-'ture, when it is the effect and fruit of 'his corruption? So Nature, who at-'tended the great Origin of all things at 'the creation, is now, by vile wretches, 'deemed in fault for all their wicked-'neſs. Had man remained in his firſt 'and natural ſtate of innocence, Nature 'would alſo have continued her original 'indulgence over him. We may now 'think ourſelves very happy, if that 'bleſſing attends our labour which be-'fore the fall of man flowed on him, 'accompanied with eaſe and pleaſure.

'Now theſe peaſe, which have ſo much 'raiſed your ſurprize, are indeed the 'growth of this iſland, though not it's 'natural product, but the gifts of Pro-'vidence, and the fruits of labour and 'induſtry. I have tilled the ground; 'Providence procured the ſeed; Nature 'gave it growth, and Time increaſe. 'With ſeven peaſe and three beans, I 'have, in four years time, raiſed ſeed 'enough to a ſtock a piece of ground, 'out of which I gather yearly a ſuffi-'cient quantity for my uſe, beſides pre-'ſerving freſh ſeed.'—'No doubt, Sir,' ſaid I, 'but, when right means are taken, 'proſperity will attend.' By that time, having eaten ſufficiently of the ſoup, he himſelf would carry the remains to the young man in the kitchen, and fetch in the boiled meat and oyſter ſauce, which he brought in another ſhell much of the ſame nature with that which the ſoup was ſerved in, but ſomething ſhallower, which eat as delicious as houſe-lamb.

Having done with that, he fetches in the other half of the beaſt roaſted, and

several sorts of delicate pickles which I never eat of before, and mushrooms, but of a curious colour, flavour, and taste. 'These,' said he, 'are the natural product of a particular spot of 'ground;' where, at a certain time of the year, he said, he gathered, for the space of six days only, three sizes of mushrooms: for though they were all buttons, and fit to pickle, by that time he had gathered all, he had also to stew, and some about four inches over, which he broiled; and they eat as choice as any veal-cutlet.

'These pickles, Sir,' said I, 'though 'far exceeding any I ever did eat in 'Europe, are really, at this time, needless; the meat wanting nothing to raise 'it's relish; no flesh being more delicious.'

Having done with that, I offered to take it away, but he in no wise would permit me; so went away with it himself, and brought the fowls, at which I was somewhat vexed; for I feared I should find no room in my stomach for any, having eat so heartily of the meat; but having, at his pressing request, tasted them, my appetite renewed at their inexpressible deliciousness; so I fell to eating afresh.

Having done with that dish, the young man, having nothing to do in the kitchen, came and was bid to take away, and fall to. In the mean time, the good old man fetched us, out of his dairy, a small cheese of his own making, which being set down, he related to us the unaccountable manner he came by the antelopes which supplied him with the milk it was made with; which introduced several weighty remarks on the wonderful acts of Providence, and the strictness of the obligations we lie under to our great Benefactor: likewise the vast encouragement we have to love and serve God, the benefits and comforts of a clear conscience, as also the inestimable treasure of content. From that he epitomized the different tempers and dispositions of men, much commending timely education, as being a means to reverse and change evil inclinations; highly praising the charity of those pious people, who chuse to bestow good schooling upon poor folks children, before cloathing, and even food; the first being rather the most necessary, and the last the easiest to come at.

That discourse being ended, he inquired very carefully after the state of his dear native country, which, he said, he left fifty years ago in a very indulgent disposition. I gave him the best account I could at that time of all the transactions that had happened in England since his absence. 'The relation of bad evils,' said he, 'are like pictures of earthquakes 'and shipwreck, which affect the mind 'but slightly; and though I think myself out of any prince's power, yet I 'shall always partake with my countrymen's grief. Pray be explicit. What 'king have we now?'—'A compleat 'patriot, and father to his subjects,' said I; 'both tender-hearted and merciful, 'encouraging virtue, and suppressing 'vice; a promoter of religion, and an 'example of charity.'—'Then,' said he, in a manner which expressed zeal and joy, 'long may that pious monarch live, 'and his blessed posterity for ever grace 'the British throne! And may Old 'England, by it's faithful obedience and 'loyalty, henceforth atone for it's past 'rebellions, that it may remove that 'execrable reproach it now lies under!' To which we all said—'Amen.' Then he filled up the shell we drank out of, and drank good King George's health, which was succeeded with that of the royal family, and prosperity to the church. Thus ended a most delicious and splendid dinner, and a conversation both delightful and instructive. But, having not as then mentioned any thing about his own history, which I exceedingly longed to inquire into, I begged him to inform us by what accident he came hither, and how he had so long maintained a good state of health. To which he answered, time would not permit him to relate his own history, being very long, and the remainder of the day too short; but that he would, before we parted, give it me in writing; having, for want of other occupation, made a memorial. But as to the maintaining of his health, he would tell me by word of mouth. 'The receipt,' said he, 'is both short and easy; 'yet I fear you will not be able to follow it. Look you, you must use none 'but wholesome exercises, observe a sober 'diet, and live a pious life. Now, if 'you can confine yourself to this way of 'living, I'll be bound that you will both 'preserve your health, and waste less 'money. But, what's more valuable 'than all that, you will not endanger 'your precious soul.' I returned him thanks for his good advice, and promised

raised him I would observe it as strictly as I could. 'I am afraid,' replied he, 'that will not be at all: you have too 'many powerful obstacles, the world 'and the flesh, from whom your affections must be intirely withdrawn, and 'all commerce prohibited, which is morally impossible whilst living; therefore, since you are obliged to converse 'with the world, I will give you a few 'cautions, which, if rightly taken, may 'be of use to you.

'Make not the world your enemy, 'nor rely too much on it's fidelity.

'Be not too free with your friend: 'repetitions of favours often wear out 'friendship.

'Waste not your vigour or substance 'on women, left weakness and want 'be your reward.

'Secrets are not safe in a woman's 'breast; 'tis a confinement the sex can't 'bear.

'Pass no contract over liquor; wine 'overcomes reason, and dulls the understanding.

'He who games puts his money in 'jeopardy, and is not sure of his own.

'There's but little honour to wager 'on sure grounds, and less wisdom to 'lay upon a chance.

'And in all your dealings take this 'for a constant rule:

'He whom unlawful means advance to gain,
'Instead of comfort, finds a constant pain:
'What e'er by lawful arts we do possess,
'Old age and sickness make it comfortless.
'Be rul'd by me, not to increase your store
'By means unjust; for 'twill but make you
'poor,
'Take but your due, and never covet more.'

I returned him thanks for his good morals, the copy of which I begged he would give me in writing, for my better putting them in practice. To which he readily consented, wishing I might observe them; and being very sure that I should reap a considerable benefit thereby, both here and hereafter.

The day being pretty far spent, I was obliged to think of going, which grieved me much; for I was so taken with his company, that if I had not had a father and mother, whose years required my presence, I would have spent the rest of my days with him. I was so delighted with his company, and pleased with his way of living, that I almost overlooked my duty; but, after a struggle with my inclination, I was obliged to yield to nature. Thus, having expressed my vexation to leave so good a man, I took my leave. The good old man, perceiving my regret to leave him, could not conceal his to part with me. 'Indeed,' said he, with tears in his eyes, 'I should have been very 'glad to have had a fellow-creature in 'this solitary island, especially one whom 'I think possessed of a good inclination, 'which I perceive you have, by your reluctance at leaving this innocent garden of life. I imagine that you have 'relations in the world that may stand in 'need of you; Heaven protect you, and 'send you safe to them! I don't imagine 'that you will ever see this island again, 'nor would I advise you to venture, the 'approach of it is so dangerous: therefore, before you go, let me shew you 'some of the rarities with which it 'abounds.' I told him, I was afraid time would not permit; but, as he said that an hour or two would do, and we had day-light enough, I went along with him.

Going out, and seeing the guns stand behind the door, I asked what he did with them. 'I keep them,' said he, 'for a 'trophy of Providence's victory over my 'enemies, and a monument of my fourth 'miraculous deliverance.' As we went along, he related to us the manner in which he had been sacrilegiously robbed once by Indians; villainously insulted twice by pirates; the ruffians having combined to carry him away, like a slave, to their own country, and there make a show of him, as if he had been a monster.

Talking, we walked under several of the before-mentioned clusters of trees, which proceed from one single plant; being come to one larger than the rest, and which he said he frequented most, it being the largest in the island—'This,' said he, 'covers with it's own branches 'a whole acre of land,' so made several remarks on the wonderful works of Nature; 'which,' said he, 'were all intended 'for the use and pleasure of man; 'every thing in the universe containing 'such different virtues and properties as 'were requisite to render life happy.' From that he made several more reflections on the fatal effects of disobedience, which is accounted a slight breach in duty, but is the mother of all sins.

That discourse held for a considerable time, till a parcel of each different kind of monkeys having met, fell to fighting,

obſerving an admirable order during the fray; which withdrew our admiration from the preceding ſubject, and ſtopt us awhile to obſerve them.

The ſcuffle was very diverting whilſt it laſted, which was but a ſhort time; for they happened to perceive us: at which they parted, each ſort running to their own quarters, which were not very diſtant from one another, ſo that from it they could ſee each other's motions. 'I 'am ſorry,' ſaid I, 'the battle was ſo 'ſoon over; they cuffed one another ſo 'prettily, that I could have ſtood an 'hour to ſee them.'—'If you like the 'ſport,' ſaid the old man, 'I can ſoon 'ſet them at it again.' With that he took out of his breeches-pocket ſome roaſted roots, which he commonly carried about him, to throw at them when he went that way, which made them leſs ſhy of him.

Having broke the roots in bits, he laid them down in their ſight; for they on both ſides were peeping from under the leaves of the trees where they harboured: then he cut a ſcore of ſticks, about the bigneſs of one's finger, and near a foot and an half long, and laid them over the bits of roots: then we retired to ſome ſmall diſtance, and hid ourſelves behind the trees.

We were no ſooner out of ſight but they hallened to the meat; the green monkeys, having leſs ground to go, were at them firſt, yet never ſtopt, but went on to hinder the others approach, who vigorouſly ſtrove to gain ground. The ſtruggle was hard, and the victory often wavering; each party alternately gave way: at laſt the grey ſort kept the advantage, and drove their adverſaries back, who being come where the ſticks lay, immediately took them up, and charged their enemies with freſh courage, like a yielding army that has received new forces: thus, with their clubſters in the front, they fell on their adverſaries with great vigour, knocking them down like our Engliſh mob at an election; ſo drove them back again almoſt to their own quarters.

In the mean time, ſtragglers of both the kinds, who had not joined with the main bodies of the armies, ſeeing the coaſt clear, and the proviſions unguarded, unanimouſly fell to plunder, and quietly did eat what their comrades fought for; which the combatants perceiving, left off fighting, and of one accord turned upon the plunderers, who by that time having devoured the booty, left them the field without contending any farther.

The battle being over, the old gentleman would have us to go on, 'Leſt,' ſaid he, 'they ſhould fall to it again out of 'revenge; for thoſe creatures are very 'ſpiteful.'

Having diſperſed them by our advancing, as intended, we walked from under the trees at the outſide, to have a better view of the rock, which, in ſome places, he ſaid, changes it's form as one approaches it. And, as he ſaid, being got clear of the trees, we ſaw at a diſtance, as it were, a conſiderable number of buildings, and here-and-there ſomething like ſteeples, which repreſented an handſome city; and ſeemingly the houſes appeared ſo plain, that, had I not been apprized of the illuſion, I ſhould have taken it for ſuch; but Alvarado and the young fellow could not be perſuaded but what we ſaw were really buildings; and even in the iſland, though the old gentleman made us ſtop a while, the better to obſerve every thing; then bid us keep our eyes fixed on what we looked at, and go on. We perceived every particular of what we obſerved to change it's form; that which at firſt ſeemed to be fronting, ſhewed itſelf either ſide-ways or backwards; and ſo of every object, till, being come at a certain diſtance, all the agreeableneſs of the perſpective, of a ſudden, turned into it's real ſhape, like a phantom; which, whilſt viſible, ſcreens that which it ſtands before; but, by it's vaniſhing, leaves it diſcovered.

Being come as near the rock as the lake that parts it would permit, we could diſcern nothing in it that could in the leaſt ſoften it's ruggedneſs, or give it a more agreeable aſpect, than thoſe which are repreſented in the pictures of ſhipwrecks.

The old gentleman, thereupon, made ſeveral learned obſervations on the alterations that diſtance works upon objects, and ſhewed how eaſily our organs of ſight may be deceived; drawing from thence this inference, that we ought not to be too poſitive of the reality of what we ſee afar off, nor to affirm for truth that which we only heard of.

Having ended that diſcourſe, he carried us to the other ſide of the jetting part of the rock, which, advancing like a baſtion of a fortified wall, ſcreened from our eyes a ſecond piece of wonder; a fine rainbow iſſuing, as it were, out of the mouth

mouth of a giant, lying on a rock, reaching quite over the lake: at the bottom of it I could not but ſtop to admire the various colours it conſiſted of, which far exceeded, in beauty and livelineſs, any I ever ſaw in the ſky. I preſently imagined that it proceeded from the rays of the ſun falling upon ſome pond, or other ſtanding water, whoſe reflections roſe and met the tops, which cauſed that beautiful circle. But Alvarado, who, by what he had ſeen before, concluded that the iſland was inchanted, ſaid it was another illuſion, which the place was full of; and would have gone away, but that the old man fell a laughing, and ſaid—'Tis 'a ſign you ſeldom enquire into natural 'cauſes. Well, do but come a little 'nearer to it, and you will find that 'which you term an illuſion, is the na'tural effect of all fountains when the 'ſun ſhines.'

Being come to the place it proceeded from, it proved, as he ſaid, only a fountain, but of the cleareſt and ſweeteſt water that ever was taſted; but the place it iſſued out of was changed from the likeneſs of a giant to that of ſome ſtrange ſort of creature; which, though having no particular reſemblance, yet would bear being compared to ſeveral different things. The old man's opinion was, that it reſembled a whale ſpurting water out at one noſtril. Alvarado ſuppoſed it was more like an horſe or a cow; and rather the laſt, there being horns plainly to be ſeen. For my part, I could find no proper ſimilitude to it, but that of an old ruined monument, which formerly they built over the heads of ſprings. Timothy Anchors (for that was the name of the young fellow that was with us) being aſked what he could make of it—'Why, really,' ſaid he, 'nothing, unleſs it be an old 'patched-up pump that ſtands at the end 'of my mother's court in Roſemary 'Lane, which every ſpring runs out of 'itſelf;' which compariſon made us all to laugh.

Thus we differed in our opinions as to the likeneſs, yet agreed, that was the fineſt fountain, and the beſt water we ever ſaw or drank. What ſurprized me moſt, was, the force wherewith it ſprung from the rock that ſtood full five yards from the place it fell on, which was another ſubject of admiration; for certainly the arts of men could not have invented nor compleated a more compact or pleaſanter baſon, though it had been for a fountain to adorn a monarch's garden: indeed there were no maſons, nor any expert artiſts work to be ſeen, but a great deal of Nature's matchleſs underſtanding: there regularity, dimenſion, and proportion, concerted to make it uſeful, convenient, and agreeable.

The baſon was very near round, about eight feet diameter, a bank around it near a foot high, and as broad at top, ſlanting gently at the bottom, both inſide and outſide, which made a moſt pleaſant and uniform bank, adorned with various ſmall flowers and herbs of divers beautiful colours, and moſt fragrant ſmells.

Having viewed with pleaſure and amazement ſuch regularity in a wild and uninhabited place, I walked about it as long as the time I could ſtay would permit: I propoſed going, but the old gentleman, taking me by the hand, ſtopt me. 'You have,' ſaid he, 'beſtowed a 'conſiderable time in obſerving the fer'tility of this iſland; now pray allow 'one minute for conſideration: the ob'ject you have been admiring all this 'time is as wonderful and ſurprizing, as 'beautiful and pleaſant. You ſee this 'fountain, which runs ſtiff, and as large 'as your thumb, and therefore by com'putation may be allowed to give near a 'hundred gallons of water in an hour: 'now it runs night and day; it neither 'decreaſes nor runs over it's bank, but 'keeps to the ſame height.'—'This, as 'you ſay, Sir,' ſaid I, 'is really worth 'enquiring into:' ſo I went ſeveral times round it, ſearching for the place, whereby the overplus of the complement did iſſue; but could not diſcover it. 'Come,' ſaid he, 'ſeek no more for that which nature 'has ſo well concealed: I have ſpent 'many hours in that enquiry, and ſtill 'remain ignorant; but have found the 'place out of which it runs into a fine 'fiſh-pond, about a mile inland; we will 'make it our way to the lake; we may 'look at it as we go by, but can make 'no long ſtay.' So we went on.

Going along, we came by an hollow part of the rock, which went in like an alcove, with a great many concavities in it in rows one above another, as round niches where figures ſtand. 'Now,' ſaid the old man, 'we are here, I will enter'tain you with an inviſible chorus of 'harmonious voices, little inferior to 'hautboys, trumpets, or other melodious 'muſick. Here I twice come and pay 'my devotions each day.' Alvarado,

who,

who, by what he had already ſeen, was prepoſſeſſed that the iſland was full of inchantments, was now certain of it; and looked upon that place in the rock to be the receptacle of fiends and evil ſpirits; ſo would by no means ſtay; but takes his leave, ſaying, he was not very curious of ſupernatural things. 'Supernatural,' ſaid the old man, 'you can't well call it, 'though to you it may ſeem very amazing: it is therefore well deſerving your 'ſight; I mean your hearing; the eyes 'have no ſhare in the entertainment: we 'ſhall only ſing a few pſalms; I am ſure 'there can be no harm in that, but rather good, being an holy exerciſe in divine worſhip, in which all good ſouls 'ought to join.'—'That may be,' ſaid Alvarado; 'but I love to ſee thoſe with 'whom I worſhipped: I don't think myſelf as yet company for ſpirits.—As for 'your part,' ſaid Alvarado, ſpeaking to me, 'you may do what you pleaſe; but 'take care your curioſity don't coſt you 'dear. Tim and I will wait for you in 'the boat; but, pray be not too long before you come.' So, having returned the old gentleman thanks for his kind entertainment, they went away; at which the good man was much affronted. 'What,' ſaid he, 'do your friends imagine I deal with ſpirits? Beſides, where 'did they ever hear that devils loved to 'ſing pſalms? for here ſhall nothing 'elſe be ſung: I would not for the world 'that thoſe admirable echoes, that hitherto have repeated nothing but the 'Almighty's praiſes, ſhould be polluted 'with the ſound of any prophane words.' I excuſed their timorouſneſs, ſaying, it was not a failing peculiar to themſelves only, but to many beſides. The old man allowed it, attributing the cauſe thereof to a very pernicious cuſtom nurſes have to frighten children when they cry, with buggabos, and ſuch things, to make them quiet; which frightful ideas often make ſuch deep impreſſion on their puerile minds, that, when they come to mature age, it is hardly worn out; which intimidates many.

That diſcourſe being ended, we advanced as near that part of the rock as the lake would permit, which in that place was not above ſeven or eight feet broad; ſo that we were within the concavity of the rock. 'Now,' ſaid the old man, 'let us ſit down on this bank, and ſing 'the Hundred and Seventeenth Pſalm.'—'Indeed, Sir,' ſaid I, 'I don't know 'it by heart, and I have no pſalm-book 'about me.'—'Well then,' ſaid he, 'I'll ſing myſelf;' ſo begins; but with ſuch a clear and loud voice, managed with ſo much ſkill and judgment, that it exceeded all the ſinging I ever heard before; and was repeated by ſuch a number of melodious echoes, that one would have believed there were a hundred voices in chorus.

The melody ſo tranſported me, that I willingly would have ſpent not only the remainder of the day, but the ſucceeding alſo; the ecſtaſy having quite put out of my mind the neceſſity of my going, and the danger of delaying: but the good man having ſung an evening hymn after the pſalm, which he ſaid he ſung every night, he takes me by the hand: 'Now,' ſaid he, 'is not this emulation? Who 'would not ſing with ſuch a chorus of 'choriſters as you might imagine was 'there?'—'Indeed, Sir,' ſaid I, 'this 'has ſo great a reſemblance to the relation we have given us in holy hiſtory 'of the ſuperior joys the bleſſed poſſeſs 'in heaven, that I thought myſelf already there; for which reaſon I would 'willingly end my days here.'—'This 'is impoſſible,' ſaid the old gentleman; 'nor can you ſpend here many more 'moments: I have the fiſh-pond to ſhew 'you yet; come let's go.' So we went on about fifty paces from thence more inland: we ſaw at a ſmall diſtance, between the trees, a parcel of fowls like ducks, but conſiderably larger, which flew away from the pond at our approach towards them. He told me how he came by the old one that bred them, of which he was robbed.

At length being come to the pond, I was ſurpriſed at the clearneſs of the water, at the bottom of which ſeemed to be large rubies, emeralds, jacinths, and other coloured ſtones; till, being come to the brink of it, thoſe which I took for precious ſtones, proved to be fiſhes by their ſwimming about, which, to my thinking, looked like ſtars, ſhooting from place to place in the ſky. Having ſpent ſeveral minutes in admiring the ſurpriſing nature and beauty of the fiſhes, I took notice of the pond, which was about forty yards in length, and near thirty in breadth: it's form was a broken oval, ſinking in and out here and there, which made it the more agreeable; all around it grew divers ſorts of herbs intermixed with flowers of different colours, and

here

here and there a basket on sticks, which the old man told me he had made and set there for his ducks to breed in. The day being far spent, the old man, after having shewed me the places at one side of the pond wherein the bason emptied itself, as also the other side whereby the pond ran into the lake, takes me by the hand: 'Come,' said he, 'I'll keep you 'no longer; night comes on apace, and 'the retreat from this island is danger- 'ous; therefore I would have you im- 'prove the short remains of the day, to 'avoid the dangers the darkness of the 'night may lead you into; so let us go 'home, that I may give you the me- 'morial I have promised you, and then 'my blessing and hearty prayers for 'your safe departure, and happy arrival.' So he went to his habitation, where he gave me a roll of parchment.

'Here it is,' said he, 'in a rough and 'unpolite language; for I did not write 'it out of ostentation, or to exert my 'parts, but to keep me in mind of the 'many mercies I have received from 'Heaven ever since my youth, and to re- 'cord the wonderful effects of Provi- 'dence; that if ever these writings 'should have the luck to fall into the 'hands of men after my decease, they 'might be an encouragement to the 'destitute, and a comfort to the afflicted, 'that he who rightly applies himself, 'and firmly trusts in the Almighty, shall, 'at his extremity, find relief: and now 'my intent is in some measure answered, 'expecting you will revise and publish 'it when you come to Old England. I 'must injoin you not to give it as my own 'dictation, but an history taken from 'heads out of my memorial; for I 'have been obliged to insert particulars, 'and use such expressions, without which 'the account I give of myself would 'have been imperfect; and which, being 'related as by me, may chance to be ac- 'counted self-flattery, which is a cen- 'sure I would willingly avoid.' I told him he might depend upon it, I should always, and on all accounts, be very ten- der of any thing that could in the least lessen the merit of the subject, or tarnish the lustre of the history.

With that the good man takes me in his open arms, and embraces me over and over with all the tenderness words and actions could express; saying, with tears in his eyes, that my exit was a re- newing of his past grief, and would for a considerable time damp the pleasures he before my coming did enjoy in his soli- tude; since now he again has had the comfort to converse with one of his dear countrymen, after full fifty years being severed from human society. The height of his grief having for some moments stopt the utterance of his words, he sigh- ing laid his head upon my neck, squeez- ing me close in his arms.

This most tender and moving action moved me to a reciprocal grief: never did any man reflect with more reluctancy than when I parted with that good old man, who having recovered in some mea- sure his former firmness of mind, his soul being again resigned, we repeated our embraces with a mutual affection. Then I took my leave; but he would not part with me there; he would by all means wait on me to the lake I was to wade over to come at the rock, on the other side of which the boat waited for me: and when I came thither, he would also have waded over with me, that he might have the satisfaction of seeing me safe from the dangerous rock; but I would in no wise permit him. Thus hav- ing prevailed upon him to stay behind, I prepared to wade over: so after a few more embraces, I crossed the lake, and came to my impatient companions, who received me with heavy reprimands for trusting myself so long alone with that necromancer; 'For nothing,' said they, 'shall ever persuade us a man can have 'such plenty of dainties with only the 'help of nature: No, no, he may talk of 'Providence as much as he pleases; he 'applies to the black art; and those 'voices he calls echoes are his invisible 'imps, which, if truth be known, are 'often employed in raising the wind, and 'causing storms, which render these seas 'often so dangerous: and it has been 'observed, that few or no ships come 'near those rocks, and escape being 'staved. For my part, I assure you I 'don't think myself safe, whilst within 'the reach of his enchantments.' With that he takes one of the oars out of young Tim's hand, and falls to rowing. 'In- deed,' said Tim, 'as you say, he 'looked very much like a conjurer, with 'his long hair and beard; and I believe 'he is conjuring now. See, here is bad 'weather coming; let us make haste 'from these rocks.'

Even as he said, in short, so it hap- pened, for in a little time after the wind

rose

roſe, and the ſea began to be a little rough; ſo that I was forced to take the hitcher, and with it keep the boat from the rocks, whither the waves very often drove us; but, ſtanding out to ſea, the wind grew more calm, and fair for the continent. I took one of the oars, and, by help of our ſail, in a ſhort time we got ſafe to ſhore; where being arrived, very much fatigued, we put up at the firſt cottage, which was inhabited by an old man and woman, Indians, where we dreſſed our fiſh, and went to ſupper; which was ſcarce over, but I was hurried on board, the wind being tacked about, and fair for our departure.

We weighed anchor on the ſeventeenth day of May 1724, and ſtood out to ſea, and ſailed ſouth and by eaſt till we arrived on the 26th at Panama on Terra Firma, after meeting with ſome ſtormy weather. Here we began to traffick, in our way home, for ſome corn, neceſſary for our following voyage; as alſo cotton, ſome metals, roſin, gums, and pepper. Our ſtay was not long here; for we ſailed from thence on the fifth of June, the wind being then very favourable: but we had not ſailed above twenty leagues, when we met with a violent ſtorm, which laſted ſome hours, and the wind blowing hard at north north-eaſt; wherein we had the misfortune to loſe our ſurgeon, one John Davis, who, being imprudently upon deck, was waſhed overboard by a prodigious wave coming in at the forecaſtle. Our ſhip received no damage in that ſtorm; but our loſs of Mr. Davis was very great, and worſe than if any other man on board had been miſſing; for we might alſo call him our chaplain, as well as ſurgeon: and by his exemplary, pious life, during the time he belonged to our ſhip, he might really be called a divine. He was a man, who, as he told me, had been educated at Hart-Hall, Oxon, in his early days, and deſigned for the ſacred robe: but his genius very much inclining to thoſe moſt pleaſant ſtudies, viz. phyſick and ſurgery, he afterwards made them his practice; but meeting with ſome misfortunes about the 35th year of his life, he left England in the year 1711, and embarked on board the John and Mary for New England, where he lived till the year 1723, when our ſhip arrived at that country, at that time wanting a ſurgeon; for our own died at our approach near the continent. Our captain, on enquiry, having an excellent character of Mr. Davis, agreed with him for our voyage till we returned back thither again. I think it but juſt to eternize his memory in theſe memoirs, and give him the character which he merited.

He was a pious good man, ſober, juſt, and virtuous; ready to ſerve, but never to offend any man. His morals were inſtructive to all thoſe who knew him, and his conſtant exhortation, while on board our ſhip, to frequent daily prayers, was the reaſon we eſteemed him the doctor of our ſouls, as well as a ſurgeon to our bodies. Nay, which is ſtill more, while he was with us, though he never entered into ſacred orders, yet he told us, he thought it his duty to give us the beſt inſtructions he was capable of, for the preſervation of our ſouls and bodies, both which were always in danger; and, accordingly, after divine ſervice, as I may call it, was performed by him in a very ſolemn manner, he would frequently diſcourſe on the nature and heinouſneſs of the ſin of man, which occaſioned the ſufferings of Chriſt; on the terrors of hell, and the joys of heaven; as alſo on the glorious creation of the world, ſetting forth the works of Omnipotence in very lively colours, telling the advantage, pleaſure and beauty, that attended a godly life. Sometimes his diſcourſes would be on natural philoſophy, which were extremely well delivered; at other times on ſome of the ſciences, moſt of which he well underſtood, and to which we gave very great attention, as being deſirous of ſuch uſeful knowledge: in ſhort, his death was greatly lamented by the captain as well as myſelf, and indeed by all the ſhip's crew; for he was a man of a quick thought and lively apprehenſion; had an univerſal knowledge in things, entirely free from reſervedneſs, but of perfect humility and condeſcenſion; moſt agreeably entertaining in his converſation, and dear to all that ever knew him.

Thus, having given an imperfect character of that great man, to whoſe memory I owe ſo much, I ſhall proceed to a further deſcription of our voyage. As to the coaſts on thoſe ſeas, I think it needleſs to make any mention thereof, they having been ſo well deſcribed already by our modern geographers, nor is it any-wiſe uſeful to my purpoſe; ſo that I ſhall entirely omit it; and only give an account of the places where we traded or touched at for freſh proviſions or neceſſaries,

ſaries, and remark what happened moſt worthy our notice in our voyage home to England.

The weather now proving more favourable, I began to peruſe the memorials of my good old hermit: but, oh! with what moving ſympathy did I ſhare with him in the multitude of his misfortunes during his minor years! Nor could I leſs ſympathize with him in the ecſtaſies of his hermetical life. I read with pleaſure and amazement what he had laboriouſly tranſcribed, being at that time doubtful whether it would ever be peruſed by any mortal; where he ſet forth a continued ſeries of misfortunes, as if linked together by divine Providence, (whilſt he lived in the wiſe world, as he called it:) and in this account, during his abode on that deſolate iſland, denotes that the omnipotent Being had always an immediate direction in every circumſtance or point of time. I was more and more aſtoniſhed and amazed by this good man's precepts, who has abandoned the world, content to live in a deſolate and loneſome iſland, uninhabited by any mortal but himſelf; where he has had the ſpace of fifty years to reflect and contemplate on the follies and misfortunes of man; during which time his maxims were always his rule of life in every caſe. O! may I once more ſee that dear old man, whoſe habitation is free from all anxious cares, from oppreſſion and uſury, and all the evils that attend this populous world! There would I abide, and never depart from that happy ſolitude, which he ſo peaceably enjoys—But whither am I running? Theſe contemplations have made me forget the remarks of my voyage.

We ſailed from Panama on the 6th day of June, and had frequent thunder and lightning, attended with ſome rain; but nothing elſe extraordinary happened. On the 15th we made Gorgona Bay in Peru, where our boat went on ſhore to a village on the main, with twenty hands well armed, reſolving to get ſome freſh proviſions at any rate; for we began to be in want, having taken in but very little at Panama. It is a low land, full of mangrove trees, and, within land, pretty high: the village was but poor; however, they brought away ſix hogs and four goats; ſome limes, and plantains. Not far from thence are ſome gold mines, but of no great note, as we were informed by ſome Indians. They are a very warlike people who live on that coaſt, and often engage one another with clubs and darts made of hard wood. The iſland is about ſix leagues in length. There are monkeys, lizards, hares, and Guiney pigs; alſo ſeveral ſorts of ſnakes, ſome of which are as big as one's leg; ſo that it is dangerous to walk in ſome parts of the iſland: one of our men happened to be bit by one, and did not live above ſix hours after; though his death had been prevented, I believe, had we not met with that misfortune of loſing Mr. Davis our ſurgeon. Here, alſo, we caught ſome mullets, and ſeveral ſorts of fiſh, extremely good, though unknown to us as to their names. In this iſland there is a creature which the Indians call a mundago, but the Spaniards a ſloth, which I think is it's propereſt name; for it is a creature which ſeems to ſleep as it walks, by it's ſlow motion: and it is reported, that it eats the leaves of trees, which are it's only food; but is ſo prodigious lazy, that when it has cleared one tree of it's leaves, it will be almoſt ſtarved to death before it attempts to climb another: in ſhort, it is a very ugly creature, and ſeems to be of the monkey kind by it's make; but it's hair is thicker and longer, nor is it ſo agreeable to look at, and is different in it's nature. Here we alſo got freſh water and wood; for there are very good brooks on that iſland, and wood enough. While we lay near the iſland, I went aſhore; and, in my converſation with a Spaniard, he related to me the following account of one Thomas Jenkins, a Lancaſhire man, who was boatſwain on board a merchant's ſhip, whoſe name I have ſince forgot, who was left on that iſland, and lived alone there two years and three months; but was firſt ſeen on that iſland by ſome Indians who came from the main for oyſters, and other ſhell-fiſh, which they frequently gather for the Spaniards. He made his eſcape from them, and hid himſelf in the woods; fearing that they would carry him to the Spaniards, and by that means he might be made a ſlave; chuſing rather ſolitude, than to enter into bondage for his life. However, an Engliſh ſhip trading on that coaſt had notice of it from the Indians; and, imagining that he might be an Engliſhman caſt away, or ſet on ſhore there (as he really was) by ſome pirate who had been in thoſe ſeas, they ſent their boat with ſix hands to the iſland in ſearch of him.

They took their ſpeaking-trumpet with them, and by that means, after about ſix hours ſtay on the iſland, they found him out. He told them, that, at his firſt being ſet on ſhore on the iſland, it ſeemed very melancholy and frightful; when he begun to reflect on the barbarity of the pirates, to leave him there without proviſions, or any manner of neceſſaries whereby he might ſuppert himſelf, (they leaving him only his wearing cloaths, and his pocket knife.) If they had left him any fire-arms and ammunition, his caſe would not have been near ſo deſperate; becauſe he then might have not only defended himſelf againſt any enemy, but likewiſe have killed ſome goats or fowls for his ſubſiſtence. He alſo ſaid, that what made him very melancholy, was, to think his habitation, and place of abode, was where he could have no human ſociety, and in an iſland that he, at firſt, knew not whether there was any thing on it for his ſubſiſtence, as never being on that coaſt before. But the ſecond day of his being there, he took a ſurvey of the iſland, and found, that there were monkeys, goats, &c. and alſo good fiſh. He dreaded greatly the ſnakes, which were larger than he had ever ſeen before; however, as they endeavoured to get from him, he reſted pretty well ſatisfied, hoping there was no beaſt of prey to hurt him there; for fear of which, at firſt, he climbed up into a pimento-tree to ſleep. He was well pleaſed to find ſuch good ſhell-fiſh, which was the only food he lived on for the firſt five days, when, by accident, he caught a young kid, which very much rejoiced him; but he was at a great loſs for fire to dreſs it; till having nothing to employ himſelf with but thinking, he remembered that he had heard, that the rubbing of two pieces of wood hard together produced fire: he tried the experiment; and, by rubbing two pieces of pimento-wood together, did produce fire, after the manner the Indians make uſe of it. He then made a fire, as having wood enough, and broiled part of his goat, which was a delicious meal to him. He afterwards began to build himſelf a hut to dwell in, where he lived, and dreſſed his fiſh and goat's fleſh; but could at firſt only broil it, till he had driven two ſtakes in the ground, where he roaſted it with a wooden ſpit. As to freſh water, as I obſerved before, there were very good brooks in the valleys. At length he invented a way by thickets to enſnare a goat ſometimes, which furniſhed him with fleſh. Here were cabbage-trees, which furniſhed him with ſauce to his meat, it being very agreeable when ſeaſoned with the fruit of the pimento-tree, which is much like Jamaica pepper; but afterwards he could run a goat down. Sometimes he had the good luck to find ſome eggs, for there were very good fowls: he caught ſome young teal alſo; and, by cutting their wings, and keeping them always cut, he preſerved them in a brook, juſt by his hut, which he had incloſed. There they bred, and were tame. But being one day gone a pretty diſtance from his hut, a great number of monkeys finding them out, and that they could not fly away, deſtroyed them all. His cloaths were almoſt worn out, nay, his ſhoes were quite gone, and had been for ſome time; but to preſerve his feet, he cut the goat-ſkins in the ſhape of ſtockings, and ſewed them, or laced them up with thongs of the ſame; and alſo laced the foot-part, making holes with his knife for the thongs, three or four times doubled together, to ſerve for ſoals. The Spaniard told me, that he was ſo well inured to that way of life when he was taken from the iſland, that it was a conſiderable time before he could reliſh either drink, or any kind of victuals which was dreſſed on board the ſhip. I gave the Spaniard an account of the hermit, to which he gave very great attention.

So, having refreſhed ourſelves, we ſailed from hence, after a ſtay of three days only in the bay; having got a pretty many goats from the iſland, and ſome maize, or Indian corn. From thence we ſteered for the Gallapago iſlands, but in our paſſage met with ſeveral ſtorms and tornadoes, attended with very great rains. Some of our men began to be very ſickly, which we thought proceeded from their eating the livers of ſome young ſeals they had caught, they being unhealthy. After about three days ſail, we met with frequent calms. During this voyage, one of our negro women, of whom we had three on board, being with child, and near her time, was delivered of a fine boy, which was of a ſwarthy colour. She had been on board us ever ſince we came from the Brazils, and proved very uſeful in waſhing our linen, &c. but Juno, for that was her name, proved with child by one of our men, whoſe name was Thomas Higgins: I, with the help of the other two negro

women

women who were on board, performed the office of a midwife, and delivered her. I had purchaſed a little wine at Panama, which proved very uſeful to mull for Juno, to comfort her in that condition; alſo the other negro women, Tom Higgins, and I, drank one bottle after her delivery; and we were really merry on that occaſion. The captain was ſomewhat diſpleaſed at this accident; but being unwilling (in ſo long a voyage, attended with ſo many difficulties as we had met with) to inflict too heavy puniſhments on his men, he only obliged Tom to agree that he ſhould allow Juno two piſtoles when ſhe went aſhore at Brazil, to take care of the child. Tom readily agreed thereto, but had ſome remorſe of conſcience, and began to reflect; and was really very much concerned to think, that the child got by him (though on a negro, yet ſhe was a woman, and the child in likeneſs of himſelf, and firmly believing that it was really begot by him, and no other perſon) ſhould be bred up in Paganiſm. Accordingly, he grew very dull and melancholy at the thoughts thereof, which he communicated to me, aſking my advice about it. So I perſuaded him to be merry, and not caſt himſelf down; for that many ſuch accidents had happened in the Weſt Indies, before then, among the Engliſhmen, who never thought much of it afterwards. However, this had no effect at all on him. He told me, that whatever crimes other people had been guilty of, he could not reconcile himſelf thereunto. Finding him ſo very uneaſy, I acquainted the captain of it: 'Ah!' ſays he, 'is Tom 'under ſo great a concern about the 'child's being not to be educated in the 'Chriſtian religion?'—'Yes, Sir,' ſaid I; 'and I am apprehenſive that it will 'grow upon him very much to his pre-'judice, he is ſo extremely concerned 'about it: for leſs things than that, I 'have known people grow melancholy '(as he ſeems to be;) and they have 'entered into a ſtate of lunacy, and ne-'ver could be brought to their former 'reaſon, but have laid violent hands on 'themſelves. As he is a very honeſt, 'good-natured fellow, (ſetting aſide this 'ſlip,') ſaid I, 'I wiſh ſome expedient 'could be found out to make him eaſy.' —'Well, then, Mr. Dorrington,' ſays the captain, 'we have the Common-'Prayer Book on board; and 'tis a pity 'we loſt poor John Davis, our ſurgeon 'and chaplain: he could have chriſtened 'the child, and that would have ſatis-'fied Tom.'—'O, Sir,' ſaid I, 'with 'your leave, as we have no chaplain 'belonging to the ſhip, now Mr. Davis 'is dead; yet, as we are tolerated to 'bury our dead, pray why may not we 'chriſten the living alſo? It can be no 'crime to do a good action.' The captain approved of what I ſaid; ſo I told him, with his leave, I would be chaplain in that caſe, as well as I had been man-midwife before: 'But, Sir,' ſaid I, 'there 'is an obſtacle that will hinder us ſtill.' He aſked me what that was? 'Why, 'Sir,' ſaid I, 'we have neither godfathers 'nor godmothers; and you know that 'is not accounted lawful to perform that 'ceremony, which is one of the ſacra-'ments, unleſs it be done with order 'and decency, as the Church directs.' To which the captain replied—'Is there 'not Mr. Clark, our lieutenant? I and 'he will ſtand godfathers; and he ſhall, 'as he is Clark by name, perform the 'office of clerk in the ceremony.'— 'But, Sir,' ſaid I, 'what muſt we do 'for a godmother? You know there 'ought to be one, and we have no wo-'man on board that is a Chriſtian.'— 'Well, then,' ſaid the captain, 'the 'women we have on board, by a little 'perſuaſion, may be willing to be chriſ-'tened themſelves; and, if they conſent, 'they are of age, and therefore capable 'of anſwering for themſelves, by which 'means they may become godmothers, 'on occaſion, to the child.' So accord-ingly, the captain called for a bottle of wine, and ſent for Diana, one of the negro women, aged about twenty-three years. When ſhe came into the cabin, the captain filled a glaſs of wine, and gave it her: after ſhe had drank it, the captain ſaid—'So, Diana, 'tis to be 'hoped that you won't be troubled with 'the wantons, and play the trick your 'ſiſter Juno did. Pray, how does the 'child do?' To which ſhe anſwered— 'It be ver well, but it cry, cry, ver muſh, 'great deal.'—'Well,' ſays the captain, 'but, Diana, I ſent for you on another 'occaſion: do you not remember Mr. 'Davis, our ſurgeon and chaplain?'— 'Yes,' ſays ſhe, 'me ver well know 'him; he give me ver gret gout ſtuff,' (meaning a dram.) 'But,' ſays the cap-tain, 'you know, Diana, he was a very 'good man, and uſed to tell you your

'duty, and teach you how to say your 'prayers.'—'Yes, says she, 'me ver 'well remember dat he be ver goot man.' —'Why, then,' said the captain, 'Di- 'ana, what do you think of being made 'a Christian, and christened as we Chris- 'tians are?'—'Me mak Christian,' says she, 'hou?'—'Why,' says the captain, 'you know Mr. Davis taught you to 'read, and you learned to say your 'prayers: they are very good prayers, 'are they not, to pray to God?'—'Yes,' says she; 'they be ver goot 'prayer; me love dem ver gret mush.' —'Well, then,' says the captain, 'are 'you willing to be good, and do as 'those prayers learn you to do?'—'Yes,' said she, 'me be always ver goot, me 'be ver glad, me lern me prayer, me 'lern more, me tank you.' So, by the captain's advice, I read the publick baptism of those of riper years, and baptized her; she answering to the questions by the instruction of the captain; and we christened her by the name of Elizabeth, which was the name of our ship. As soon as the ceremony was over, the captain ordered Elizabeth to dress the child in as decent a manner as she could, and bring it to his cabin: in the mean time we drank the bottle of wine. As soon as the child was dressed, Elizabeth carried it to the captain, who sent for Thomas Higgins, and told him that Diana was christened, and that he himself, and the lieutenant, were to stand godfathers to his son, and Elizabeth godmother; and that it was to be christened; and desired to know what name should be given to the child: to which he answered, his own, viz. Thomas. But I never saw such an alteration in any man in my life as I immediately observed in him: so suddenly it appeared, that it surprized us all; for he, who before was dejected, even to the greatest degree imaginable, now appeared fully satisfied in his mind; and conscience no longer seeming to fly in his face, he became full of mirth and jollity. So, by the captain's order, I christened the child in a very decent manner; the captain and lieutenant stood godfathers, and Elizabeth stood godmother. When the ceremony was over, the captain said—'Tom, as this child was begot and born 'on board my ship, and I am it's god- 'father; and as it is now a Christian; 'I think it properly belongs to me '(though I am not the father of it) to 'see it brought up in a Christian man- 'ner, which, if it please God to bless 'me with life, I will see performed; 'and not only that, but will take care 'of it, if it lives, during my life, and 'see it well educated.' So the captain ordered half a goat to be roasted; and he, the lieutenant, and I, with Tom and Elizabeth, whom he permitted on that occasion, supped at his table, and were very merry: which so rejoiced Elizabeth, that she, immediately after supper, related what had happened to her fellow negro woman, who was called Antiope: and they both went to Juno, and told her, that her son was baptized by the name of Thomas.

The weather here was extremely hot in the day-time; but there were cold dews at night, which were very dangerous; for three of our men died in our voyage to the Galliapagoes.

As we sailed, on the twenty-fifth at night, the sea very much surprized us, it seeming to be as red as blood; which occasioned Stephen Jones, who was upon the watch, with some others, to call us up; for they had never seen the like before. When we came upon deck, we supposed it to be a great quantity of the spawn of fish swimming on the water, it being very fair. Having passed the line, we made the Galliapagoes on the fifth of July, where we anchored about a mile off the shore, in a good, smooth, sandy ground. We sent our boat ashore for water, but could find none. Some of our men began to be sick, but none of them died before we arrived at Puna Isle, in Peru; from whence we sailed a little way up the river Guiaquil, where we saw a great many alligators, and sold some of our goods: but the Spaniards being jealous that we came as spies, and belonged to some other ships on that coast, which were Buccanniers, we thought it best to leave that place, having taken in some fresh water, and a few provisions, to serve us to the Isle of Labos. We stood out to sea, and made the island of St. Clara, where we anchored on the tenth, for that night, (our ship proving crank, and sailing very heavy:) the next morning, when we were preparing to sail, we found that our ship had sprung a leak; so that we were obliged to have one hand at the pump continually. Before we had sailed six leagues, the wind freshened upon us, and the sky looked extraordinary black at north-east, and it moved towards us, which

which made us take in our top-ſails; and afterwards we reeved our main-ſail and mizen; at which time it began to rain, and poured down as if through a ſieve. The ſea ſeemed as if it had been all on fire, by the prodigious thunder and lightning. It then being night, the elements over our head looked moſt diſmally black, but all round the horizon was as red as blood: the waves, which ſeemed to daſh againſt the clouds, by the violence of the wind, ſparkled like lightning, which, together with the thunder, made a terrible noiſe; at laſt, breaking in upon our deck, it carried away one of our anchors; and we durſt not bring our ſhip to the wind, for fear of her foundering, it being dangerous, in a ſtorm, to turn a ſhip backward and forward; ſo we were obliged to lie in the trough of the ſea. But the wind and rain abating, we obſerved, to our great joy, a Corpus Sanct at the top of our ſpindle. Theſe Corpus Sancts are good ſigns when ſeen aloft; but bad omens, and denote a great ſtorm, when ſeen on the decks. It is a ſmall glimmering light, like a ſtar, when aloft; but when on the deck, it appears like a glow-worm. It is the opinion of mariners, that it is a ſort of jelly, incorporated by the wind, rain, ſea vapours, and air; becauſe it is never obſerved unleſs in ſtormy weather.

We ſailed right before the wind, which was ſouth-weſt, but were obliged to keep continually pumping till the eighteenth day; when we made the iſle of Labos, about twelve at noon. That night we got ſafe into the harbour, and anchored at twenty fathoms water, in clean ground, between the two iſlands: here we reſolved to carren our ſhip. Accordingly, obſerving the time of high water, we put her into a cove, in the ſouthermoſt iſland, where we hauled her up as far as we could on the land; and our carpenter, and all hands, ſet to work the next day. This iſland is barren, and without freſh water. Here we killed ſeveral ſeals, ſea-lions, boobies, and penguins; a ſea fowl about as big as a duck, whoſe fleſh is very ordinary food, but the eggs exceeding good: here alſo we found a ſmall black fowl, which makes holes in the ground to rooſt in at night, whoſe fleſh is very good; and a great many vultures and crows. We had carreened our ſhip, and were in readineſs to ſail on the twenty-ſixth, and ſailed to the iſland Fernandos, and made the middle bay on the ſeventh of Auguſt, winter being juſt over there; which continues only for two months, viz. June and July. We have verbal accounts here of ſeveral men who have been left, or caſt away, and have lived ſome time, and very well, on this iſland. Here we mended our ſails. There is plenty of very good fiſh of divers ſorts. It is very pleaſant on the ſhore, and very healthy; ſo that the men who had been ill on our voyage, perfectly recovered their healths; for the green pimento-trees diffuſed a very agreeable and refreſhing healthy ſmell all over the iſland. Here we ſpent ſome time in taking wood on board, and likewiſe in laying water up, which here is very good; we alſo boiled a conſiderable number of ſea-lions, of which there are plenty here: we had alſo plenty of young ſeals, which eat very well; only their livers are unwholeſome: and at the ſouth end of the iſland we found ſome goats, of which we killed about thirty, which were excellent food. Here were alſo plenty of turnips and watercreſſes, which were of great ſervice to us in curing the ſcurvy; of which we gathered a very large quantity.

So, having refreſhed ourſelves very well on this iſland, we reſolved to ſteer for Cape Verde in Chili; on the twelfth, made the Iſland of St. Jago, where we anchored, and ſent our boat on ſhore. Here we bought ſome hogs and black cattle, for our voyage round Cape Horn to the Brazils; as alſo ſome corn and maize. Here the people, from the ill uſage they had formerly met with from the French, are extremely ſharp, and really diſhoneſt; for if they trade with you, and cannot get the advantage of you which they think you would have of them, they will ſnatch your goods, and run away with them.

We weighed anchor on the twentieth, and ſailed from hence round Cape Horn, in 51 degrees 15 minutes ſouth latitude, as our pilot informed me, I being only a merchant on board, and therefore do not pretend to make a methodical journal, only as I promiſed to give an account of the moſt material paſſages in our voyage home. Round the Cape the weather favoured us extremely, and nothing happened that was material, only that we were chaſed by a pirate-ſhip for about twelve hours on the twenty-ninth; but the night coming on, it favoured us ſo that we loſt her. On the fourth of September we made Faulkland's Iſland. Here we ſaw a great number of porpuſes, which

often

often leaped out of the water, of an uncommon sort. On the fifth we had the misfortune to have one of our men fall into the sea, as he was throwing the lead; and he was drowned before we could give him any help. We had very brisk gales at south-west. We sailed, and made Cape St. Antonio, near the mouth of the river De la Plata, in Paragua, on the twenty-fifth, the wind south by west; when we stood out to sea, and made the isle of Grande, on the coast of Brazil, on the twenty-ninth. We got a pilot, who conducted us into the watering-cove, at the inner westermost point of the island. In sounding as we went in, we hardly met in any place with less than ten fathoms water. The island is about nine leagues long, high land near the water side; it abounds with wood; has monkeys and other wild beasts; plenty of good timber and fresh water, oranges and lemons. We had pleasant weather, but extremely hot. We here received a letter from our owners, commanding us home, and not to sail for New England, as designed. Here we got beef, mutton, hogs, fowl, sugar, rum, oranges, and lemons; so that now we did not want good punch. During our voyage from the Galliapagoes, I applied myself to the perusal of my good old man's memoirs, which I took very great delight in; and finding the whole series of his minor years attended with such a number of unaccountable accidents, hardly to be paralleled, I thought proper, as I designed them to be published at my arrival in England, to digest them in a more regular manner than I found them wrote in his manuscript; but neither added nor diminished; nor did I in the least vary from what he himself had wrote, as to the accidents of life; only I made some amendments which I thought necessary: for his absence from England so long as fifty years, had occasioned him, in some manner, not to be well acquainted with the language as it is now spoken; and, by his living without any conversation so long a time, had made him, in some measure, forget his own mother-tongue. Though I really think, taking that into consideration, that his account was very polite; yet, had his life been published, as in his memoirs, it would have appeared very obsolete, and difficult to be read, though ever so entertaining. I accordingly collected all the passages of his first twenty-eight years together, and thought proper to make a book, or part by themselves, that part of his life being different from his hermetical confinement on the island, which at first sight appeared so full of horror, and nothing but a prospect of the most miserable condition that could befal him. He no sooner looked round him, and, depending upon Providence as a supporter of the distressed, but he found almost every thing necessary for human life on that small island; and he, who then thought of nothing but immediately perishing in the most miserable condition, has lived, by the help of divine Providence, in a safe and plentiful manner; and is now so inured thereunto, that he despises the populous world and it's vanities: he also considers it's pompous glory to be of no more substance than a shadow; and that there is no felicity on earth, unless in solitude.

I likewise methodized his account, during his residence on the island, in the former manner; and made another book or part; which with this account of my finding him on the island, and my conference with him, compleats my design: so that it cannot be called an imperfect description, but compleat, in three books. So I return to my voyage.

In our voyage from Juan Fernandes we saw a very large bird which is called an Alcatres: these birds spread their wings from eight to ten feet wide. In the Brazils is a serpent called Liboya, or the roebuck serpent, the report of which is incredible, (in my opinion) but affirmed by some of the Portuguese; viz. that there are some of them thirty feet long, it's body being as big as an hogshead, and destroys a roebuck at one meal. Here we trafficked for several sorts of drugs. We treated the Portuguese very civilly, who supplied us with all things necessary for our use. During our stay here, there arrived a brigantine laden with negroes, for the golden mines. Here four of our men died, and three ran away from us, the last of which we had just occasion to be thankful for, rather than sorry; for Timothy Anchors overheard them discourfing, that they designed to mutiny at our next sailing, but was doubtful whether or no they might get enough on their side to overpower the captain and his party; and agreeing among themselves, that it was a very difficult matter to become masters of the ship; and, besides, considering the hazard they run, in being punished, after

such

ſuch a ſevere manner as they ſhould be, if found out by any means, before they could accompliſh their deſign, or if they ſhould fail in their attempt; made them rather chuſe to deſert the ſhip, than continue any longer. Though our captain was an extraordinary good man, yet rogues will be always employing their wicked thoughts; and neither clemency nor good uſage can make them perform their duty in their ſtations.

The tenth of October, after having ſet Antiope, one of our negro women, on ſhore, who refuſed to be chriſtened as Diana was, we began to ſail, but kept Elizabeth and Juno on board; the captain reſolving that ſhe ſhould live with him as his ſervant, and by that means would bring up Tom's child. We did not meet with any thing very remarkable; but after about twenty-four hours eaſy ſail, we paſſed the tropick, and the next day ſaw land. We ſtood from it ſouth ſouth-weſt, and had cloſe cloudy weather all night, with ſhowers of rain. When day broke, we ſaw Aſcenſion Iſland at about a league's diſtance; and about nine o'clock we came to an anchor. The ſea is here very deep. The next day we weighed anchor, and ſailing north north-eaſt, till the ſeventeenth, with a freſh gale at weſt ſouth-weſt, we croſſed the line. The next day an ugly accident happened; for we brought a young bear from Mexico; and our men being often uſed to play with her and teaze her, it proved very fatal to one Thad Obrian, an Iriſh boy, of about ſixteen years of age, who had been fretting the creature with a ſmall rope, which he made a nooſe to, and ſlipped her hind leg into it, and ſo worried her. Her blood growing warm, and ſhe being enraged at his hunting her to-and-fro on the deck, where he happened to ſlip down; the bear immediately ſeized poor Thady by the neck, with ſuch violence, that, before any body could deliver him from her paws, the poor boy's throat was tore to pieces; ſo that he died inſtantly.

We ſailed but very ſlowly now, meeting with continual calms, and directed our courſe for the Cape Verde iſlands; but on the twenty-ſixth we had a heavy tornado, attended with lightning, which fell as if the elements had been on fire; but it continued only for a ſhort time: afterwards the weather proved extremely fair, the wind being full ſouth. A ſailor going up to furl the main top-gallant on the third of November, in the morning, ſaw land, and ſuppoſed it to be one of the Cape Verde iſlands, bearing north-eaſt, diſtant about ſeven leagues, ſmooth water, and freſh gales. About four o'clock we bore north north-weſt, and went with an eaſy ſail till day-light, and made the iſland of St. Vincent; when, about nine o'clock, we anchored in the bay, in about five fathoms water, where we rode till the next day; and then we went to St. Nicholas, another and one of the largeſt of the Cape Verde iſlands. Theſe iſlands are ſo called from Cape Verde in Africa, and are moſtly inhabited by Portugueſe. One of them is called Sal: it derives it's name from the prodigious quantity of ſalt which is naturally congealed in ſalt-ponds. There are ſome poor goats on this iſland, and ſome wild fowls. Here are flamingoes, a large fowl much like an heron, but bigger, and of a reddiſh colour: they feed together in muddy ponds, or where there is but little water. They are hard to ſhoot, being very ſhy.

In St. Nicholas we traded with ſome of the Spaniards for ambergris; but they were very fraudulent, having counterfeited it much. Here are ſome vineyards and plantations belonging to the Portugueſe; and wine, much like Madeira, of a pale colour, and thick. The people are ſwarthy, and the inhabitants live ſcattered in the valleys.

While we were at this iſland, we ſcrubbed our ſhip's bottom, and dug ſome wells on the ſhore, where we got freſh water. Here an ugly accident had like to have happened; for one of our men, going down into the hold with a candle, ſet fire to a bale of cotton, which, by his careleſſneſs, had like to have been the loſs of our ſhip: but, thanks to God, it was diſcovered by it's ſmother, juſt before it began to blaze out; ſo that by immediate help we got it extinguiſhed. Very ſoon after we hoiſted it upon deck, for fear any of the fire ſhould remain and revive again, and becauſe we would have it in mind for our ſafety.

On the eighth we went to the iſle of Mayo, another of the Cape Verde iſlands, but made no ſtay. We ſaw at ſouth-weſt the iſland Del Fago, which is remarkable for being a volcano, or burning mountain, out of which iſſues flames of fire; but they are only diſcerned in the night, and then are ſeen a great way at ſea: yet there are inhabitants on this iſland (as I have been informed by the Portu-

gueſe

guese of the island of St. Nicholas) who lived at the foot of the mountain, near the sea. There are also cocoa-nuts, plantanes, goats, and fowls.

In the island of St. Aritanio, another of the Cape Verde islands, there is a very large spider (as I was informed by the same Portuguese) which weaves it's web between the trees; and it is so strong, that it is difficult for a man to get through. Here are also wild asses; likewise salt-pits, where great quantities of salt are naturally made by the sun's heat; with which they load yearly several ships, and are able to sell much greater quantities than they do, if they had but vent for it.

Having dispatched our affairs at the Cape Verde islands, we weighed with the flood, having a small gale at south south-west. On the seventeenth it began to blow, and veered to the south-west by south. That evening we saw three sail of ships at west north-west, bearing, as we supposed, for the Canary islands, as well as ourselves. The night coming on, which was extremely clear and fine, we passed the tropick about the break of day; soon after which we observed a north bank lying in the horizon. We then provided for a storm, which those clouds denote. The wind was at north-west. We brought the ship under our main-sail and mizen only, and ballasted our mizen; but yet the wind and seas were too high for us, and every wave seemingly threatened to overwhelm us; so that we beat up and down with only our bare poles, which we feared would break in upon our deck, which must have foundered us, in case it had so happened: we also lowered our main-yard and fore-yard down a port-last, as I observed the sailors called it, that is, pretty near the deck; and the wind blew so extremely fierce, that we did not dare to louse any head-sail at all; for if we had, they certainly would have been blown away. During the storm, it rained exceeding fast, which continued for about four hours, when it changed, and was pretty calm; and we began to get every thing in good order. The wind that evening changing to south-west, about six the next evening we saw the Pike of Teneriff at about nine leagues distance. We saw some flying-fish, and a great deal of sea-thistle swimming. We sailed all night with a small easy gale, and at break of day made the Canaries, bearing at north-west by west, about three leagues. We crouded all our sail, and came to an anchor in the harbour of Santa Cruz, in the island of Teneriff, on the twenty-first, in about thirty fathoms water, black slimy ground, about half a mile from the shore. The land being for the most part pretty high, it is very bad going ashore here in boats; and ships riding here are often forced to put to sea, or slip their anchors, by reason the road lies so open to the east. Ships are here supplied with good water between the coves, where they generally water.

Sancta Cruz, a small town fronting the sea, has two forts to secure the road. Here some English merchants reside. Their houses are low and uniform, covered with pantiles. Here are oranges, lemons, and other fruits; also flowers and sallading, and a great number of pleasant gardens. At Oratavia the country is so full of risings and fallings, that it is troublesome to walk up and down in it: mules and asses are most used by them. Here grows the right and true Malmsey wine; here are also Canary and Verdona, or green wine: likewise a great many convents. Ships are forced to slip their cables, perhaps three or four times, by reason of the winds, and put to sea before they can take in all their lading. Here are wheat, barley, maize, beans, pease, apples, pears, plumbs, cherries, pomegranates, citrons, oranges, lemons, and several other fruits, excellently good; also, horses, asses, mules, cows, goats, hogs, deer, and fowl, both tame and wild, in great plenty. Provisions are dear on the trading islands, but cheap on the others.

Faro isle is very remarkable: it hath no fresh water, only in the middle of the island, where there grows a tree, which being continually covered with clouds, from it's leaves always drop great quantities of excellent water. These Canary islands are commonly the rendezvous of the Spanish West-India fleet, where they generally receive orders for unlading their wealth.

From the harbour of Sancta Cruz we sailed, on the twenty-fifth of November, to the Canary Islands: here the soil is so fertile, that they have two harvests in a year. It's commodities are, honey, wax, sugar, and the best of wines; of which we took in a sufficient quantity of each: here are also, dragon's-tree, which produces

duces a red liquor called dragon's blood. These islands are exceeding wholesome, though they are inclinable to heat.

Having taken in the cargo which we designed from these islands, we sailed from thence on the third of December for the Madeira Island, with a fair wind at south south-west, and saw several ships sailing towards the Lizard. The next day at eight in the morning, we made land, which was the Madeira, at about four leagues distance, and came to an anchor. Here are many fountains and rivers, which refresh the country. It is a very beautiful island, exceeding fertile, and produces excellent wine, which is very strong. We anchored in the port, which resembles an half moon, not far from the town. Near this island is another, not so large as this, (which is about sixty leagues in compass) called Porto Sancto, which affords much the same commodities as Madeira: here we took in about thirty pipes of Madeira wine; and having accomplished our business, we left that island on the tenth, and sailed for the Lizard with a westerly wind. We had not sailed above six leagues, but it changed to north-east, and the sky began to be covered with small hard clouds, very thick, one by another, which we imagined an approaching storm: accordingly we provided for it, by reeving our top-sails, and took in our sails as fast as possible. The wind began to blow a very brisk gale, and soon after the storm began; the wind still increased by squalls of rain and hail, which came very thick and fast, and the sea ran very high; so that we were obliged to run before the wind. We shipped little or no water, though some washed into our upper deck; and with some of the waves a dolphin was cast thereon. The wind blew very hard, but about eight hours after it abated it's fierceness, and then the wind veered to the west, and the foul weather broke up, and we had smaller gales, with some calms, and fair weather. On the eighteenth the wind veered to south south-east, which continued a brisk gale till the twenty-ninth, and we kept right before wind and sea, the wind still increasing; and we made the Lizard on the twenty-seventh, at about three leagues, and stood in for the land, and came to an anchor in King's Road, January 3, 1724-5.

Thus I have given an account of our voyage from Mexico, as I promised, which I hope may not be offensive to any body; it being my intention to divert the readers, rather than displease them.

N.B. The ship belonged to Bristol. I communicated the following memoirs to a friend in London, in order to be published; which, if approved of by the publick, I shall, at my return, be very well satisfied. In the mean time, I have business calls me to Peru and Mexico again; in which voyage I hope to see poor Phil. my good old hermit. And so I take my leave, and end the first part.

EDWARD DORRINGTON.

BRISTOL, Nov. 6, 1725.

THE

ENGLISH HERMIT.

BOOK II.

AN ACCOUNT OF THE BIRTH AND EDUCATION OF PHILIP QUARLL; AS ALSO, THE MOST SURPRIZING TRANSACTIONS OF HIS LIFE, FROM HIS INFANCY TO HIS BEING CAST AWAY. TAKEN FROM THE MEMOIRS HE GAVE TO MR. EDWARD DORRINGTON, THE PERSON WHO FOUND HIM ON THE ISLAND.

PHILIP Quarll was born in the parish of St. Giles, in the year 1647. His father Thomas Quarll, formerly a master builder, having unfortunately ruined himself in building, was at last reduced to work at the laborious and mean business of brick-making. His poor wife also was obliged to lay her hand to the labouring oar; so went a chairing: which slavish and confining occupation robbed her of the necessary time to attend the fruit of her conjugal affection, her beloved Phil. so that she was obliged, whilst she and her poor yoke-fellow were drudging to get him bread, to commit him to the care of one kind neighbour or another, for a small consideration, till he could prattle, and go alone; at which time she put him to school to a good old matron woman, where he continued till he was six years old.

One day a neighbour who formerly had the care of the child in his mother's absence, having contracted a particular love for him, being a very pretty child; finding him, after school-time, sitting at his father's door, takes him by the hand, and leads him to his mother, then at work at an old lady's house in Great Ruffel Street.

The house-keeper, who was naturally fond of children, seeing this pretty child, takes him up in her arms, and runs up to her good old lady, who had just ended her customary private devotion.

The child, whom the poor woman kept very neat and clean, beyond what could be expected out of her small gettings, was naturally very handsome; being tall for his age, and well-shaped; his features regular and well-proportioned; his complexion fair; his hair long and curling; his countenance mild and sprightly; his behaviour gentle and easy: all which qualifications rendered him completely amiable, and made the old lady conceive an inclination for him uncommon for a stranger's child, especially of so mean a birth.

Thus having often kissed him, she wished he had been her own. 'But why,' said she, 'can't I do for this lovely creature 'though no kin to me by birth? Nature, 'who has endued him with qualifications 'so proximal and suitable to my inclination, has, by sympathy, made him related to me. His mother gave him 'birth, which, without prejudice to her 'own life, she could not refuse; now I'll 'give him education, the principal and 'most necessary care by which real love 'can be expressed to a child.'

So, having given orders, that a good school might be enquired after, she put him to board to a master, whose most commendable character of instructing his scholars, in their duty to God and man, as well as in literature, had procured him a considerable number of children of the best

beſt families. There ſhe intended to have kept him till he was, by years and learning, qualified for ſome genteel trade; intending to leave him in her will, forty pounds, to ſet him up, when out of his time.

But now ill fate begins to ſhew it's averſeneſs to poor Phill's happineſs: the worthy lady died ſuddenly, and was interred a few days after, to his unſpeakable prejudice and threatening ruin. But watchful Providence, who had decreed him good, averted the apparent evil, and only permitted ſome interception to her purpoſes, the better to raiſe his eſteem of her ſucceeding favours, when ſenſible of them.

The maſter, having conceived a particular love for the boy, (whoſe uncommon docility, and extraordinary aptneſs in learning, had overtaken the reſt of his ſchool-fellows, though of a much longer ſtanding) was very much vexed at the thoughts of his going away to his parents, they being no longer able to continue his ſchooling: he was unwilling to part with the boy, and much diſturbed to loſe twelve pounds a year for a boarder. His love, for the child, whom he had in a manner adopted for his own, would now and then rouſe ſlumbering Charity, whom ſelf-intereſt too often caſts aſleep. 'Pity,' ſaid he, 'ſuch blooming wiſdom and for-'ward learning ſhould wither away for 'want of cultivation.' Thus having pondered awhile, love and charity, after a long ſtruggle with intereſt, gained the victory. The old man concludes to give him his learning, if his relations would only find him in board and other neceſſaries.

This being concluded upon by both parties, Phil. continued going to ſchool for the ſpace of four years longer; during which time, he made himſelf a compleat maſter of the grammar, writing, and arithmetick; he alſo made a vaſt improvement in ſinging; having all that time been taught by a maſter, who attended ſome boarders three times a week; who, finding an extraordinary voice, and natural diſpoſition in the boy, took a fancy to teach him: ſo that Phil. was, in ſome reſpects, qualified to attend the ſchool, in the nature of uſher, had his age permitted it. But as he was as yet too young to keep the ſcholars in that awe which is neceſſary in a ſchool, the maſter only gave him his board, till the elder ſcholars left off, and he was grown bigger; intending then to allow him a ſufficiency to maintain himſelf, as others in that ſtation. But ill fate ſtill attends the poor boy: the good old man died in leſs than a twelvemonth, and was ſucceeded by a ſuperannuated nonconformiſt miniſter; who, having not ſo proſperous a ſchool as his predeceſſor, had no buſineſs for an aſſiſtant: ſo Phil. was a ſecond time obliged to return to his poor mother, (his father being dead;) who, not being in a capacity to do for him, as his education and natural parts really deſerved, propoſed to him to learn ſome trade, in order to get his bread honeſtly and creditably, when ſhe ſhould be no more able to help him; having, by her hard working and frugal living, made ſhift to lay up five pounds, which ſhe dedicated to that purpoſe.

Poor Phil. who had conceived a notion that there is a ſervitude and hardſhip entailed upon that ſtation, was very loth to reſolve upon entering into it; but as he was a very diſcreet boy, not inclined to play, as children commonly are, and ſeeing that there was a neceſſity for him to reſolve upon ſomething; to make his choice the more eaſy, he conſults the maſter's nature and temper, rather than the goodneſs and profitableneſs of the trade: and as there lived in the neighbourhood a locksmith, ever ſince he was born, who, being great with his father, would often play with him when a child, and now and then give him farthings to buy fruit; he choſe to be bound to him; which was done in about a month's time.

They both agreed wonderfully well, the maſter being very kind and good-natured, and the man as diligent and careful; ſo that thoſe fears of meeting with hardſhips being diſperſed, he chearfully worked on, without thinking the time tedious. But this happineſs, though ſlight, was but of a ſhort laſting; for the poor man, having been bound for a relation, who failed, had all his effects ſeized upon, and himſelf thrown into gaol; and poor Phil. in a year's time, was obliged to go to his mother again.

This accident was a vaſt diſappointment to the boy's learning his trade, he being obliged to be idle, his unfortunate maſter begging that he would ſeek after no other; hoping every day to make up his affairs, and carry on buſineſs again: ſo that the lad, for want of employment, would play about the ſtreets with neighbours children.

One day, as he was playing at leap-frog with other boys, there happened to go by one James Turner, an houſe-breaker, who taking notice of his activity, which much exceeded the reſt, judged he might be of great uſe to him in the practice of his art. The meanneſs of his dreſs, which ſpoke him of no conſiderable family, gave him room to hope that he might eaſily get him: ſo having ſtopt awhile, he took the opportunity, that the boy, being hot with running and jumping, went to drink at a pump hard by. He takes him by the arm, ſaying—'Do you mean to kill your-'ſelf, child, to go and drink cold water 'now, when you are hot? Come along 'with me, and I will give thee a draught 'of good ale: you ſhall only go a ſhort 'errand for me.'—'Will you, maſter?' the innocent boy anſwered; 'I will go 'your errand, if it is not too far.' So followed him to an alehouſe, in a blind alley, not far from thence, which he commonly uſed. Being come, he calls for a quart, and bids the boy take a hearty pull; which he did, being very dry, and the liquor as pleaſant: this being done a ſecond time, it began to creep into his head, not being uſed to ſtrong drink; and in a little time he fell aſleep on the bench on which he ſat.

The ſeducer, thinking himſelf ſecure of him, leaves him to take his nap, ſhutting the door upon him, and charging the people of the houſe not to awake him, nor let him go away when awake, till he returned; ſo went to get ready the implements neceſſary to ſet his evil project in execution; having determined to rob a rich merchant that night, in which wicked action he intended to make the harmleſs boy his chief inſtrument, by putting him in at an hole he was to break, and then to open the door for him, under the pretence that it was his uncle, who was ſo ill-natured as to lock him out, if not at home at the ſhop ſhutting up.

Having got the tools, he returned to the boy, whom he found juſt awake, and very uneaſy to go home, having ſlept till it was dark, being afraid to anger his relations by ſtaying out late, contrary to his cuſtom, being uſed to orderly hours; and would have gone away, had not Turner, whoſe projects would have been quite unhinged, uſed all the deviſes he was maſter of to perſuade him. Firſt he beſpeaks a ſupper of that which the boy liked beſt, who ſince his being come from the boarding-ſchool, had been uſed to none but coarſe meat, his poor parent's ability affording no better: then, to divert away the time he intended to prolong till his opportunity ſuited, he told him ſeveral ſtories, and, moſt particularly, that of his pretended uncle's unkindneſs to lock him out of doors, and of his cunning invention to get in at his own time, and unknown to him; but that he was afraid he muſt be forced to lie out that night, which would be his death, being not uſed to ſuch hardſhip. The poor tender-hearted boy, who could ſcarce forbear crying, whilſt he related this diſmal ſtory of his uncle's unkind uſage, aſked him what was the matter he could not get in that night as well as at other times?—'Becauſe,' replied the ſly knave, 'the poor boy that uſed to let me in is 'ſick of the ſmall-pox, as I have heard 'ſince you fell aſleep.'—'What! can't 'you get ſomebody elſe?' ſaid ſimple Phil. 'I would do that for you, if I 'could tell how to get into my own home; 'for my mother goes to bed betimes, be-'ing obliged to get up early.'—'As 'for that matter,' anſwered the ſubtle ſerpent, 'do not trouble yourſelf; I will 'provide a bed for you.' Thus having removed both that, and all other obſtacles the boy raiſed, he perſuades him to ſtay.

But ever-watchful Providence reſcues his enſnared innocence. Some hours before he was to go about the execution of that evil project, Turner was apprehended for a great robbery he committed the night before in Lime-ſtreet; and the boy, being in his company, was alſo carried before a magiſtrate. But the juſtice underſtanding, by the innocent boy's defence, he hardly was yet guilty of any robbery, having regard to his youth, and modeſt countenance, reprimanded him for his eaſineſs of being drawn into bad company, and warned him to be more cautious for the future; ſo diſcharged him, and committed Turner, who was hanged.

That accident, though very lucky, by preſerving innocent Phil. from being made acceſſary to a robbery which would have put his life in jeopardy, at the end proved fatal; he having thereby gained the character of belonging to ſome ill gang: for which reaſon nobody cared to be concerned with him, which grieved his poor mother.

The poor widow (being left with her unfortunate ſon, who ſhe feared would take

take to some evil way for want, which often tempts the most innocent inclined) not being able out of her small gettings, to maintain him, as when assisted by her late husband; and seeing no prospect of his master's coming out of prison, and being set up again, endeavoured to get him into some place to wait upon some of her mistresses: but the unlucky accident of being had before a justice of the peace, with a notorious house-breaker, frustrated her endeavours; so that poor Phil. was obliged to continue with his mother, in a very mean condition, which his honest mother very much feared would induce him to evil company, of which the parish she lived in swarmed: but the good instructions which were given him in his infancy, before bad examples could have made any impression on his mind, kept out of his thoughts all wicked devices. Thus, seeing no probability of amendment in the station he was in, he resolved upon going to sea, wanting for that employment neither character nor recommendation, which he was sensible would be a hard matter to get, by reason of this most fatal accident.

Thus, having imparted his design to his loving mother, who, with much reluctance, acquiesced in his going from her, and leaving his native country, where she once had hopes to see him well settled; she, with weeping eyes, implores the Almighty to direct and receive him into his protection; and as she was acquainted with no one that could direct and advise him in that matter, she bid him go to St. Catherine's; 'there,' said she, 'you may 'chance to hear of some captain or ma-'ster of a ship, bound for some short 'voyage, who, perhaps, may want a 'cabin-boy; which is, my dear child, all 'that your age and strength qualifies 'you for: in a few years, with the help of 'God, you may find some advantageous 'opportunity to advance yourself by 'your learning.' So, having given him sixpence to bear his charges, with a tender kiss, she goes to her wonted occupation, and he straight to St. Catherine's, where Providence had prepared a master for him; he being no sooner come thither, than a captain of a ship, bound for the East Indies, taking a particular fancy to him, asked him whether he would go to sea; and that, if he was so disposed, he would take him to look after his cabin, and provide very well for him.

The gentle manner in which he spoke to the boy, and his mild countenance, made a vast progress in his affection: so, having joyfully accepted his offer, he desires that he may run home, and acquaint his mother of it. The captain, having taken his name and place of abode, gave him half a crown to spend with his mother, and then to come to him, at the sign of the Black Boy, near the Iron Gate; that he need bring no cloaths with him; for he would provide every thing necessary for the voyage.

The overjoyed boy, having told his mother of his extraordinary success, gave her the money, being in great haste to return to his new master: so having embraced his tender mother, and she her dear son, weeping over one another for some time, he leaves her at her work.

The good woman, though she had all the reason in the world to be easy in her mind, that the boy was out of those temptations which great want, and bad company, might lead him into, could not be reconciled at his going from her: but, seeing no remedy, she sends crowds of prayers after him, accompanied with showers of tears, recommending him to the care of Heaven, to whom she daily made addresses for his prosperity.

Phil. who from his infancy had been used to be from his mother, was less disturbed at his leaving her, nothing but his new-intended voyage running in his mind; so hastened to the rendezvous his new master had appointed him; who, not expecting that he would return, was so glad to see him, that he went that moment and bought him both cloaths and linen fit for the sea; so equipped him anew cap-a-pee; then took him home, and in a few days after, set sail for a three years voyage.

During their sailing, Phil. whose agreeable aspect and temper had gained him all the ship's crew's love, being often with the man at the helm, soon learned the compass, and, by the instructions every body on board strove to give him, in a little time he was qualified for a sailor, which his master being made sensible of, whom he had often diverted with his singing during that voyage, allowed him sailor's pay, the following voyage, which was soon after; for, in less than three weeks time, the ship was new-laden, and set out again for the same place, and was gone as long as before; at the end whereof, it returned home richly laden,

and

and in a ſhorter time than was common: which being put in the news, as uſual, prompted a certain number of Drury Lane nymphs to go down to the place where they heard the ſhip was arrived; ſuppoſing that the luſty ſailors, having a long time been confined to ſalt meat, would, at their arrival, being flush of money, purchaſe a bit of freſh at any rate.

Being come to Graveſend, where the ſhip lay, they found, according to cuſtom, the jolly crew in an alehouſe, ſpending like aſſes, what they had earned like horſes, even before they had received it.

At the ladies coming, the elevated ſailors, who had been ſailing on ſalt water for the ſpace of three years, and ſince ſet their brains floating in ſtrong drink for ſix hours, having loſt the rudder of their reaſon, ran headlong upon thoſe quick-ſands, where moſt of them loſt all they had, before they could get off.

The ingenious ladies, who had more wit than honeſty, improved the abſence of their underſtanding: and, being very expert in the art of ſathoming, they fell to examining the depth of thoſe ſhallow-brained fellows pockets; which finding very low, they were much diſheartened from going on, for fear of running a-ground: but, underſtanding that their ſhip had not yet been cleared, they caſt their anchor there, waiting for a freſh gale.

Mean time, the merry ſailors, fearing no ſtorm, gave themſelves up to ſport; and, for better diverſion, every man takes a play-fellow, and goes aſide, leaving baſhful Phil. behind; who, being a ſtranger to the game they were going to play at, did not dare to put in for a partner: but croſs fate ſtill attending him, a ſnare is laid in which he muſt fall.

Every man, but modeſt Quarll, being gone away with a wench; one, being gone ſupernumerary, ſtaid behind. The crafty creature, who, from her firſt coming in, had fixed on the innocent young man for her quarry, kept at ſome diſtance from her comrades; waiting their abſence, to work her deſign.

Unthinking Phil. having no ſuſpicion of her cunning devices, lying entirely unguarded againſt her ſly attacks, ſtood no long ſiege, but capitulated at the firſt ſummons. It is true, ſhe was provided with ſuch artillery, as no fortifications againſt love could withſtand; but would force the moſt ſtubborn to ſurrender, or at leaſt parley, which is a fore-runner thereof.

Thus, having fixed her baſiliſk's eyes upon him, as being the firſt battering-piece the ſex plants, when they purpoſe a breach in a man's heart; ſhe charges him with a volley of engaging words, whilſt her looks and carriage offer him ſuch prevailing terms, as no man of any feeling can refuſe: therefore, being an exquiſite miſtreſs of her art, ſhe ſoon obtains her ends.

Poor Quarll, whoſe heart, till then, had never been beſieged, finding the invader more tempting than dreadful, ſhe having a very agreeable ſhape, charming complexion, and moſt engaging features, ſurrenders up at diſcretion, and ſubmits even to bear the yoke of matrimony; which, in leſs than an hour, is laid upon him; the chaplain of a man of war, who lodged in the houſe, happening to come in at that critical minute.

By that time, the abſent revelling crew were cloyed with their miſtreſſes, and had diſmiſſed them with rough uſage and ill language, of which they generally are flush, when money is ſcant.

The diſappointed wretches, ſeeing no redreſs for their treatment lately received, which they well knew proceeded from want of money, concluded upon ſtaying in that place til their ſhip was cleared; by which time their appetite being ſharpened again, and they flush of money, and hoping they would alſo be better chaps; they took a garret in a little ſtrong-water-ſhop, where they made ſhift to kennel together, and live upon ſhort commons.

Our new-married couple, whoſe money was but ſcanty, were alſo obliged to put up with indifferent quarters; but the hopes of receiving the poor huſband's pay ſoon, and withal, the thoughts of being protected from a gaol, which ſhe was in danger of, before married, being the principal advantage ſhe propoſed to herſelf by having a huſband, it made her now eaſy. But ſhe and all the reſt of her companions were diſappointed. The ſhip being unladen, the cargo proved damaged, by the leaking of the veſſel, which is commonly made good by the ſailors: ſo that, inſtead of three years wages being due, the poor men ſtood indebted to the merchants.

That diſappointment put the unfortunate ſeamen, and eſpecially the ladies, into a ſad conſternation; the former being obliged to go another voyage with empty

empty pockets, and the latter to seek for cullies to support their extravagance, and to pay for new lodgings.

Phil. who, during the voyage, had saved a little money, which his master gave him at sundry times, being disgusted at the sea by the late accident, resolves to seek his better fortune in another manner.

His crafty wife, who was, by her marriage, screened from her creditors, depending upon her former occupation, indulged him in that resolution; so they set out with that little he had, and arrived pretty bare. Finding no friends in London, his master being dead whilst he was at sea, he resolves to list in the foot-guards for bread, having no other dependence; so consults with his spouse about a lodging, till he had quarters appointed for him. She, indeed, was best acquainted with the town, and knew of several that would suit both their stock and station, but durst go to none, having bilked most of them, and left a score with the rest. But lodging must be had before night; and the day was far spent; which set her a thinking, necessity being the mother of invention: and she, as is peculiar to women of her employment, being well acquainted with it, was no stranger to shifts; and presently finds one.

Having pondered for a short time, she concludes upon going to her last lodgings; where, though she was considerably in debt, she questioned not but she should still find a kind reception, and that her landlady, where she had been about a fortnight, having given over her debt, would at her coming slacken the ill opinion she had conceived of her, and afford her kind usage: so, having fixed a rendezvous for her husband, she hastens there; where she found, as was expected, the old woman as overjoyed as surprized to see her; and much more, when she understood she was married to a sailor, lately arrived from a three year's voyage; who in a short time, would be cleared, and that then she would rub off her score. The old woman thinking herself secure of her debt, and sure of a good customer, bids her kindly welcome; and that she hoped she would take no other lodging, but in her house; that she would make every thing as easy and convenient as she should desire; being as welcome to score as with ready money.

The subtle woman, having gained her ends, goes and fetches her husband, whom the over-reached old woman receives most kindly, expressing her love by a quartern of all-fours, the chief commodity of her house: that being drank, was succeeded by a second, at the new tenant's cost; which being brought, with a chearful welcome to as many as they pleased, encouraged the coming in of half a dozen more: these warmed the company, and particularly the landlady; who having greeted Quarll for his most happy marriage, over and over, fell upon praising his wife, whom she had known for a long time; giving her all the encomiums that virtue itself could deserve.

In this manner they lived about a fortnight, still upon score; which increasing very fast, and no prospect of money, it obliged the landlady to put them in mind; often asking when they expected the ship to be cleared. Quarll, who discerned, by the cloud which appeared over her brow, a threatening storm, begins to think of an harbour, and forthwith goes and lists himself in the foot-guards.

In that mean station, which often is the last spite of a surly fate, a continuation of misfortunes attends him: the company where he listed in, is full of mercers and shopkeepers, who for a protection took on in the service, and quitted their pay to the covetous colonel, to be exempted from duty, which made it fall heavy on the effective men: but kind Providence, who ever limited the evil that attended him by fortune, ordered this it's vexatious influence to turn to his advantage.

One day that he mounted guard out of his turn, being upon duty at the Park-gate next to Chelsea, about ten at night, the place being clear of people, he fell a singing to divert melancholy thoughts, which solitude is apt to indulge: at that time happened to come by a colonel of the same regiment, who, being merrily disposed, stopped for several minutes to hear him sing: Quarll, having made an end of his song; fell a whistling the tune; at which the colonel came to him, saying—'How can you profane such a fine 'tune with whistling, when you can sing 'it so well? Pray let me hear you do it 'once more; and grace it with that 'good voice nature has given you.' Quarll, having made some few modest excuses, yields to his pressing solicitation, and sings the same song over again, and with

with more care than before; which so pleased the gentleman, that he stood half an hour with him, asking him questions, and, being by him informed whose company he belonged to, having his consent to be exchanged, he gives him five shillings to drink his health; and charges him to come to him, at the Mitre Tavern at Charing-cross, the next day at eight of the clock in the evening, and ask for Colonel Bonguard: so went away.

Quarll, being off duty, the next day went to the place, at the time appointed; where he finds the colonel, in company with half a score more gentlemen, who received him with more civility and complaisance than is commonly paid to men of his coat: so, having desired him to sit down amongst them, and the glass going round once or twice, the colonel having praised his singing to the company, he was desired to compliment them with a song; if he pleased, with that he sung to the colonel the night before. Quarll, having modestly told the gentlemen, he wished that his skill and voice deserved the honour of their hearing, and that he would do the best he could, having, at their request, drank another glass, he sung the song they desired, to their great satisfaction and applause.

After a short space of time was spent in the praise of singing, and a talk of what an engaging accomplishment it is, either in man or woman; some of the company holding that the charms of musick are no wise inferior to the power of love; it occasioned a very agreeable debate; there being in the company a gentleman unfortunately under that circumstance, who would give love the supremacy over all that can affect our minds; seeing it strips a man of the benefits of his own senses, of the strength of his reason, and soundness of judgment. No object is fair, but that whose idea hath impressed the mind; no harmony heard but in the beloved voice, or that which sounds it's praise; dainties have no savour in the absence of that which every thing relishes; the fairest days are but dull, if not enlivened by the light of the charmer's presence.

Thus he ran on, till the company, perceiving he was beginning to be uneasy, desired Quarll to sing the gentleman a love song, who spoke so much in it's praise; which he did, and pleased the lover so exceedingly, that he made him a present of half a guinea. The gentleman, who was altogether for musick, having asked Quarll whether he had any thing in the praise of it, having also his request answered, made the rest of the company crave a song in the commendation of what suited their inclinations; some being for a bottle, others for roving, and others for a country life.

Quarll, being provided with such songs, entertained them to their desires till supper was brought up; which being over, the company, who had been so well diverted with Quarll's singing, consulted together to do him service: and, as he was well qualified to teach, they proposed to recommend him scholars. A gentleman in company, having a sister, who intended to learn, he writes a letter to her, desiring she would make use of no other master; which letter he was to carry the next morning: and as his regimental cloaths might lessen her opinion of his merit, he bids him, before he goes, to call at his lodging, and he would present him with a suit of cloaths, which he wore but part of last summer, and therefore little the worse for wearing. And, as he wanted but an hat to be compleatly dressed, (having an extraordinary handsome head of hair) another gentleman bids him call on him for one; so that he had all he wanted to set him out.

The gentleman having given him directions where to go for the things, and the colonel his promise to get him discharged out of the company he did belong to; at least, to have him exchanged into his own; they every one gave him their crown apiece: so they departed, bidding him not fail coming thither again that day sevennight.

This unexpected, but lucky adventure, like a sudden surprize, unframed his reason, and makes poor Quarll overlook the only obstacle that could obstruct his blooming happiness. Thus transported with seeing himself master of more money than ever he was worth before, and in a fair prospect of advancing himself; he hastens home, and in his guard-cloaths, in which he ought not to be seen there; being a dress obnoxious to most, and more especially to creditors.

His landlady, who, till then, had been made to expect her money, thinking he only waited the ship's being discharged, to go another voyage; seeing him in that hope-killing dress, gave a shriek, as if she had seen the devil: slanders and abuses,

abuſes, ſtriving for utterance, croud in her foaming mouth; and, like a rapid torrent, which, running from a large extent into a narrow channel, ſwells and overflows it's banks; ſo her paſſion, finding her mouth too ſinall a paſſage, breaks out through her eyes: thus, having ſhrieked and roared awhile, which occaſioned all her lodgers to come down, ſhe charges poor aſtoniſhed Quarll with ſhoals of abuſes, in the vileſt and moſt inſulting terms the moſt inveterate malice can expreſs.

Thus having exhauſted her ſtock of ſlanders, her tongue having uttered all the evil ſhe could, ſhe ſet her miſchievous hands to work upon his wife; who, being come to ſee the occaſion of her ſhrieking, ſtood like one bereft of her ſenſes: ſo, having torn her head-cloaths off her head, with words ſuitable to the barbarous deeds, ſhe thruſt them both out of doors; which, though the rudeſt action that could denote the unmercifulneſs of her intended revenge, was to them, at that time, the kindeſt act ſhe could perform.

That unexpected treatment was no ſmall check to Quarll's chearful diſpoſition; but having conſidered, that one time or other he muſt have ſtood the ſhock, he rejoices that it is over; and, being free from the care of getting her paid, he has at that time nothing to think of but to find another lodging; which being then too late to go about, he concludes to wait for morning at a certain cellar at Charing Croſs, which is open all night. Going along, ſhe mildly blamed him for his unadviſed coming in that dreſs, which, he might imagine, could produce no better effect. To which he anſwered, he never could have wiſhed for better; for, by her turning him out of doors, ſhe had paid herſelf, which he would have done had he ſtaid: but now he was come away, being better provided, and in a better way, he would have better lodgings; ſo told her of the adventure, which much rejoiced her; and from that time made her reſolve to forſake her former way of living, which misfortunes only drove her to, being not led by evil inclination, as many are.

The morning being come, whilſt ſhe went to ſeek for lodging, he went for the cloaths he was promiſed the evening before, which fitted him as if made on purpoſe, and made him appear as one of the genteel employment he was recommended for. Being new ſhaved and powdered, he went with the letter, according to order; and was received ſuitably to the recommendation given him. The lady being juſt up, made him drink chocolate with her; then, having required a ſong, ſhe agrees with him for a guinea a month, the uſual rate, and gives him a guinea at entrance, as it is common; ſo began that very morning, promiſing to recommend him to a lady, who had two daughters; which ſhe accordingly did, and ſent him thither the next time he came.

This fair proſpect of an handſome and genteel living, which he always was deſirous of, made him forget his paſt misfortunes. Thus joyfully he returns to the cellar, where he had ſpent the night before, and where he had appointed to meet his wife, after ſhe had fixed upon a lodging; who accordingly came in leſs than a quarter of an hour, hoping ſhe had pleaſed her huſband, which ſhe reſolved for the future to endeavour. She ſat down, expecting his coming, not knowing he had already waited hers; his change of dreſs concealing him from her, not expecting to ſee him in ſo different a garb from that which ſhe left him in: which he perceiving, comes up to her, and takes her by the hand, going to aſk her the ſucceſs of her walk; but ſhe, putting it out of his power, in an angry manner bidding him go about his buſineſs, having none with her, prevented his ſpeaking. His ſilence, which ſhe took to proceed from baſhfulneſs, occaſioned her looking him in the face; in which diſcovering her dear huſband's features, to whoſe natural handſomeneſs his genteel cloaths were no ſmall addition, ſhe was ſeized with ſuch a ſurprize, that it ſtruck her ſpeechleſs for ſome minutes.

Quarll, diſcerning her diſorder by the fading of her freſh complexion, was as much ſurprized as ſhe. Thus trembling, he takes her in his arms—'My dear,' ſaid he, 'what's the matter? Are you 'not well?' Having recovered her ſpeech, ſhe embraced him; ſaying—'How can 'I be ill, when my dear heart and ſoul 'appears ſo well?'

Theſe kind words, and the return of that fluſh which firſt kindled love's fire in his heart, enflames it afreſh; hardly can he govern his new-raiſed paſſions thus, giving her a kiſs—'My love,' ſays he, 'have you got me a lodging?'—

'Yes, my dear,' replies the loving wife; 'you ſhall ever dwell in my heart.'—'But I want to lie in your arms,' anſwers he; 'that can't be done here.'—'Well, then,' ſaid ſhe, 'I have provided a fit place.' So, having each of them taken a dram, they went away.

Sally, who till then was a ſtranger to real love, now feels it's true ſmart; and though ſhe has for ſome time enjoyed the fruition, the only bliſs pains-taking lovers aſpire at for the reward of all their toils and labours, and the happy ſhore love's compaſs points at, yet ſhe ſeems uneaſy, as expecting ſomething more: ſhe cavils with time for flying too faſt. Whole days and nights are too ſhort for her to behold her dear. She continually bears his image in her heart, and wiſhes ſhe could for ever have him in her arms; which from that time ſhe confecrates to chaſte embraces; devoting herſelf wholly to the diligent and aſſiduous practice of the neceſſary qualifications in a wife, to render an huſband truly happy; the execution of which wiſe and virtuous reſolutions, gained her the tendereſt and moſt ſincere love and affection a really fond huſband can ſhew or expreſs to a darling wife.

They lived in that truly happy ſtate about half a year; at the end of which, cruel fate, envious of his uncommon happineſs, moſt barbarouſly robs him of it, almoſt as ſoon as he had favoured it's incomparable and matchleſs ſweets.

One ſummer morning, loving and truly-obſerving Sally, knowing her huſband delighted in flowers and greens, went to Covent Garden, in order to buy ſome to garniſh her windows and chimney, being the only things wanting to compleat the neatneſs of her lodging, which ſhe kept in the greateſt order. As ſhe was going, ſhe moſt unfortunately met with the perjured knight, who deceived her out of her virtue, and with whom ſhe had lived a conſiderable time, in expectation of his fulfilling the promiſe he made her, when ſhe put him in poſſeſſion of her maiden-treaſure; who, being glutted with his ſacrilegious theft, moſt baſely and ungratefully left her deſtitute. Fain would ſhe have ſhunned the fatal principle and origin of her paſt misfortunes, and helliſh motive of her late evil life, which ſhe mortally abhorred, and zealouſly renounced: but inexorable fate has decreed her ruin; ſhe can no wiſe avoid him; he was too near before ſhe perceived him, and had hold of her hand ere ſhe could ſhift it out of his way.

Being thus ſuddenly ſtopped by him, ſhe would have embraced the ſevereſt death, to avoid the vile ſeducer, by whom her innocence was firſt betrayed. The irreconcileable antipathy ſhe had conceived for the mortal enemy of her newly retrieved virtue, being ſtartled at his terrifying appearance, ſet her whole faculty in an uproar, and ſcares away her ſenſes; not ſo much as a word left her to expreſs her trouble.

The amorous knight, whoſe late love for the fair Sally (whoſe regular living had repaired thoſe charms her former lewd life had very much damaged) was revived, and grown more paſſionate than ever, flattering his hopes with the thoughts that her preſent diſorder proceeded from joy and ſurprize, took the opportunity of an empty hackney-coach which was going by, to bring her to his lodgings: ſo having ſtopped it, he puts in the poor diſpirited woman, altogether inſenſible of what was done, or deſigned; but having, with the ſhaking of the coach, recovered a little ſpirit, and finding herſelf ſo much in his power, as aimed at her total ruin, ſhe gave a loud ſhriek, which occaſioned the coach to be ſtopped by ſome people who were going by; but his proteſting he had no other deſign but to take her to a friend's houſe till ſhe was intirely recovered, repreſenting alſo the danger of expoſing herſelf by oppoſing his kind intention, being then near a ſtreet where he and ſhe had lived together a conſiderable time, in ſome meaſure pacified her: ſo having put his head out of the coach, he tells the people who ſtood by, that his wife, who had been lately overſet, was afraid of the like accident, which made her ſcream; ſo bid the coachman drive on; during which time he entertains her with all the marks of a paſſionate love, ſwearing over-and-over, he was her ſlave for ever; and that now kind fortune once more brought them together, none but death ſhould ſever him from the perſon he loved ſo dear; and that he would expire in thoſe ſoft arms which often gave him life.

Theſe fond expreſſions, which ſhe formerly had given credit to, are now upbraidings and reproaches for her too eaſy credulity, and only increaſed her hatred for the deluder; which, at that time ſhe thought proper to conceal: thus, reſtraining

ing her paſſion, ſhe aſſumes a feigned calmneſs, and mildly returns him thanks for his love, which ſhe cannot indulge, being married. 'Married!' ſaid he, 'and 'living! Was you not mine?'—'I was, 'indeed,' replied ſhe, bluſhing with anger and ſhame. 'But what was I? I tremble 'to think on't.'—'Why,' ſaid he, 'my 'love and heart's delight, and ſhall 'be, whilſt breath keeps it in motion.' —'Oh, falſe man!' ſaid ſhe, weeping moſt bitterly, 'repeat not thoſe deluding 'words, which betrayed my virtue.'— 'Come,' ſaid he, 'ceaſe that flood which 'overflows my ſoul with the bittereſt of 'ſorrows, and reprieve the moſt penitent 'of men from the cruelleſt of deaths: 'my ſubmiſſive obſervance of your in- 'clinations ſhall henceforth atone for all 'paſt given diſpleaſures.'—'Mean you, ſaid ſhe, 'as you ſpeak?'—'By all that's 'ſacred, I do,' replied he.'—'Then,' ſaid Sally, joyful, 'ſet me down here, 'and I'll forgive what's paſt.'—'No, 'my dear, this being a requeſt I cannot 'in honour grant, I may, without breach 'of promiſe, refuſe; I muſt ſee you quite 're-eſtabliſhed firſt.'

By this time the coach was arrived to the directed place, which proved to be an houſe where ſhe had laſt lived with the knight, which being open, and the landlady at the door, obliged her to go in without reſiſtance; fearing it would be of no uſe, but rather prejudicial to her deſign: ſo ſhe quietly went in, hoping ſhe ſhould have a better opportunity to get away, after ſhe had made the landlady underſtand that ſhe was married. But the ſordid wretch, hoping the knight would lodge there again, who proved an extraordinary beneficial lodger before, went out of the room, and left her to his pleaſure.

Poor Sally, ſeeing herſelf at the point of being a ſecond time undone, there being no one to aſſiſt her within, nor hopes of any help from abroad, the room ſhe was in being backwards, next to large gardens, and diſtant from the houſe, and therefore out of hearing, gives herſelf up to deſpair, ſeeking the opportunity of laying hold of his ſword, on which ſhe was reſolved to fall, rather than yield to his adulterous deſires. Thus, whilſt the knight was labouring to expreſs the height of his love, by the moſt endearing terms, and prevailing words, the moſt paſſionate lover could invent; ſhe, of a ſudden, ſnatched the ſword from his ſide, and turned the point thereof towards her breaſt, in order to execute her barbarous, though virtuous reſolution. 'What do you 'mean?' ſaid he, laying hold of her arm. 'To get myſelf at liberty,' ſaid ſhe, 'which you baſely refuſe:' ſo falls into a violent fit, which laſted ſome minutes; which was no ſooner over, but it was ſucceeded by another, and ſo on for the ſpace of three hours; at the end of which time ſhe was ſo faint and weak, that her life was deſpaired of, and ſo continued all day; which made the knight repent that he had forced her to ſtay, ſo much againſt her will; heartily wiſhing that he knew where ſhe lived, that he might ſend her home; which ſhe not being well enough to tell, the landlady, by the knight's order, got the beſt room of the houſe fitted up for her; and the bed being warmed, ſhe was carefully laid in it, and a doctor ſent for; who, having felt her diſordered pulſe, ſaid, her indiſpoſition proceeded from paſſion and grief, and ordered that ſhe ſhould be let blood, which would give her oppreſſed ſpirits a preſent relief. The phyſician was no ſooner gone, but the ſurgeon was ſent for, to perform the doctor's orders, which gave her immediate eaſe, and in a little time cauſed her to ſleep, which laſted all the night.

This great and ſudden amendment much rejoiced the moſt afflicted knight, who made a vow not to leave her till ſhe was reſtored to her wonted health; ſitting up by her all night.

The next morning, Sally, whoſe good night's reſt had in a great meaſure recovered both ſtrength and reaſon, finding herſelf in a ſtrange bed, and from her huſband, was again ſeized with ſurprize, which did much threaten a relapſe. 'Heavens!' ſaid ſhe, 'by what inchant- 'ment am I here? What fiends could 'raviſh me out of my dear ſpouſe's 'arms?' Then ſeeing the knight ſtand by the bed-ſide, ſhe gives a loud ſhriek. 'Oh! vile raviſher!' ſaid ſhe, 'is it then 'by another of your helliſh ſtratagems 'that I am again betrayed into your 'power?' at which ſhe fell into a violent fit of crying. 'No, moſt virtuous wo- 'man,' replied the knight, falling on his knees; 'it is by accident, of which I 'own myſelf to be the moſt miſerable 'occaſion; for which I heartily aſk both 'Heaven and you pardon.' Then he relates the whole matter, which the late illneſs her exceſſive grief and paſſion brought upon her, had made her forget.

That woful relation did but add to her trouble, by heightening her grief. 'Oh!' said she, with a fresh shower of tears, 'how can I now look my dear husband 'in the face, when my very justification 'turns to my shame?'

The knight, who was in as great a consternation as she could be in, takes her hand, which lay motionless out of the bed, and, bathing it with tears, begs her to forbear terrifying his most penitent soul, promising to rectify all past wrongs. 'You remember, my life,' said he, 'the 'vows I made when first you gave your-'self to me: I renew them now, and 'would fulfil them, but that it would 'expose you to the rigour of the law: 'therefore, I'll only, for the present, 'settle five hundred pounds a year upon 'you for your life, till, by your hus-'band's death, I am empowered to make 'you lawful mistress of all my estate. 'Pray compose yourself, and sedately 'consider on't, and, when 'tis come to a 'conclusion, I'll attend for your an-'swer.' So withdrew for a while.

This generous offer, expressing the sincerity of his love, for whom she had formerly more than a common esteem, in a great measure appeased her passion; the offered atonement disarms her revenge; she now pleads for him she had condemned, and blames herself for the crime she had charged him with. 'How could 'I,' said she, 'think my virtue safe in 'his hands, on whom love has such an 'ascendant (which is itself guilty of as 'many faults as it covers?) If he went 'away with my heart, it was but a breach 'of trust: besides, his absence was no 'slight, it being occasioned by business.'

Having made these reconcilable reflections, and being at the point of accepting his offer, conscience starts, and opposes her resolution: her husband stands in the way, rigged in all those engaging qualifications which had won her affection. This, coming into her mind, in a manner scares away her reason; she cannot help loving both: her love for the knight pleads seniority, and that for her husband justice. The first is attended with interest, the last is prompted by virtue. The debate is great, and both their arguments strong. Reason is called to decide the matter, which having (as it is her custom) sedately weighed the cause, examined both accidents and incidents, at last seems inclinable to favour the love for the knight; but Justice, who is always in the right, will not resign it: Peace and Content, the only motives worth contending for, must be consulted. They, being also cautious of giving a rash verdict, examined on which side they were in most safety; and finding themselves most screened from upbraidings and reproaches (their mortal enemies) for the knight, gave it of his side. So Justice, who seldom gets it's due, is forced to drop the cause, and tacitly withdraw.

The knight's offer, being the softest choice for an easy and quiet life, which she could not reasonably expect from her husband, who doubtless would, from the late accident, conceive an ill opinion of her virtue, (which, although at that time blameless, she could not with modesty vindicate) having sent for the knight, she speaks to him after this manner.

'I have had so much reason to repent 'my being too credulous, by the many 'vexations it has occasioned me now, 'that should I, upon the bare re-eating of 'broken promises, expose myself to the 'same, you yourself could not but blame 'me.'—'Indeed, dear Sally,' said the knight, interrupting her, 'I own you 'have sufficient cause to question my 'sincerity; but I will this moment re-'move it:' so that moment sends for a lawyer, and makes the proposed settlement; then gives orders that a mercer should be fetched for her, to take her choice of the most modish silks, and then for a silk night-gown, for her to wear till her cloaths were made: as also for all manner of linen, shoes, and stockings. Then having new rigged her from top to toe—'Now,' said he, 'my dear, you 'are entirely mine; give me directions, 'that I may send your husband what he 'can challenge as his own:' so writes the following letter:

'SIR,

'LEST the absence of her, who un-'thinkingly gave herself to you 'for a wife, (though not at her own dis-'posal, being mine before) should cause 'you any further trouble, these are to 'satisfy you, that I have retaken posses-'sion of my own; to send you back her 'cloaths, as being all you can claim a 'right to. I am yours,

'R. S.'

Having sealed up the letter, and bundled up the cloaths, a porter was called, to whom orders were given to carry the bundle

bundle and letter to the moſt perplexed and concerned Quarll, who ſpent the night in unſpeakable torment. A thouſand diſmal accidents glared at his alarmed fancy, which created new racks for his tortured ſoul. He tumbles on his bed like an unmaſted ſhip toſſed about by a violent ſtorm, curſing the tedious hours for creeping thus in the dark night; taxing the ſun with ſloth, and nature with unkindneſs. Thus, like one bereft of his ſenſes, and quite void of reaſon, he ſnarls at the whole creation.

At length, the long wiſhed-for day having ſent forth it's dawn, to proclaim it's approach, he ſtarts from off the bed whereon he lay as if upon thorns, and, like a madman, runs about to inform himſelf of what he dreads, more than death, to know. But, having ſpent ſeveral hours in diligent enquiry after lately befallen accidents, without hearing of any, jealouſy creeps in, which in ſome meaſure removes his former fears, but no wiſe leſſens his pains. Thus he returns home as much racked as before.

Being arrived, he finds on his table a bundle, and a letter, which his landlady told him were brought by a porter. His impatience to know the contents of both were equal; but the bundle being more ſurprizing to him, he precipitately opens it firſt; which finding it to be every individual part of the cloaths his wife had on the day before, when ſhe went out; with the ſurprize, he lets it drop out of his hands, and, like one thunderſtruck, remained ſpeechleſs for ſeveral minutes. Then fetching a deep and heavy ſigh, attended with a ſhower of tears, he bitterly exclaims againſt himſelf for queſtioning the faithfulneſs of that love, of which he now has ſuch fatal proofs.

Thus, concluding ſhe had drowned herſelf, and that the letter would inform him of the cauſe thereof; he takes it up, ſaying—'O that thou hadſt been 'a timely forerunner of the fatal tidings 'thou art bearer of! Yet, for her dear 'ſake that wrote it, I'll peruſe thee, 'though thy contents be but racks for 'me, and the moſt cruel tortures that 'ever were or can be invented.'

But great was his ſurprize, when he found it to come from a man; and inexpreſſible his confuſion at the contents: his ſenſes are all in an uproar; he blames his eyes for not ſeeing right; his apprehenſion for miſtaking the meaning: his blind love taxes his reaſon with raſhneſs, the miſtaken expreſſions being but illuſions proceeding from an oppreſſion upon the intellects; ſo lays down the letter till his diſturbed mind was better ſettled: yet he cannot be eaſy; he muſt, with ſome other writing, try whether his eyes are ſtill defective: on which, finding no fault, he haſtily takes up the letter again; but alas! it was the ſame as before. 'My 'judgment,' ſaid he, 'has been as much 'wronged as my love.' So, after a few conſiderations, calling to mind, that as an accident had procured her to him, he ought, without reluctancy, to ſurrender her again; having made a reſolution never to venture any more on that uncertain ſtate, which commonly promiſes happineſs, but often brings ſorrow: he ſhifts his lodging, and goes to live where he was unknown, the better to paſs for a batchelor; in which free ſtation he enjoyed peace undiſturbed, and pleaſures uncontrouled, for the ſpace of twelve months. But croſs fate ſtill purſues him; he muſt again be fettered, and bear yet heavier chains than before. A ſecond mate is allotted him, who, though very chaſte, dooms him wretched, being ſhort of other qualifications neceſſary in a wife to make a man happy.

This woman had been bred up from her infancy under the care of a lady, whoſe two daughters Quarll taught to ſing, and had lived with her in ſtation of a chamber-maid, ever ſince ſhe was big enough to officiate in that place; during which time, having behaved herſelf to her miſtreſs's content, ſhe gained her affection; ſo that this good lady, being deſirous to advance her maid, whoſe age fitted her for marriage, the chief ſettlement for a woman, ſhe caſt her eyes upon her daughters ſinging-maſter, who ſhe thought would make her a good huſband, having obſerved him, ever ſince he came to her houſe, to carry and behave himſelf very decently. Thus having declared her mind to her, who had already a great inclination that way, ſhe readily ſubmitted to her lady's will, who promiſed to bring it about.

The good lady, having conceived the principal means to bring her deſign about, took the opportunity of Quarll's next coming, to propoſe it to him, promiſing to make her worth three hundred pounds, which was the only motive that could engage him to break the reſolution he had made. The young woman being alſo very agreeable in her perſon, and extra-

ordinary

ordinary obliging to him, he readily accepted the offer.

The old lady, having so far prevailed upon him, is resolved to push on till quite concluded; so has them married in less than a week, and gave them lodgings in her house, where they continued but one month. The new-married wife, thinking herself, in some measure, under confinement whilst in the good lady's house, to whom duty and gratitude obliged her to be more than indifferently observing, being likewise somewhat ambitious of living great, persuades her husband to take a house, and furnish it; which being done according to her desire, they went away from the kind old lady to live by themselves, without considering the expence of housekeeping, which they both, till then, had been strangers to, but, in a little time, became too well acquainted with.

The three hundred pounds being gone in furnishing the house and paying two years rent, and as many years wages to a couple of maids, one whereof she kept in the station she herself had but lately overcome; Quarll was obliged to reduce his charges, and level his expences to his income; so discharges the superfluous servant, whose business was only to indulge her indolence, and increase her pride.

That sudden lessening of her attendants checked her ambitious disposition, in such a manner that it threw her into the spleen; which was like to have cost him more money in doctors, than the servant's wages which he endeavoured to save.

Being taken very ill, and knowing not what to complain of, a doctor was granted, at her importunity, rather than her need; who, being come, and finding her indisposition lie in her temper, more than a defect of nature, ordered her medicines to make them both in the same condition.

Her strength decaying, and the apothecary's bill increasing, which are the usual effects of imaginary illness, made her husband apprehensive, that considerable charges might accrue from her fanciful and imaginary distemper, which he would not indulge; and feared to check too suddenly, lest it might produce some other ill effect; so, in compliance to her natural pride, he promises her going in the country, as being a proper expedient to save his money, and to be rid of a grunting companion, at least during the summer.

This proposal, suiting her ambition to imitate quality, (who, for the generality, go out of town about that time of the year) was soon accepted of; and that opportunity of being freed from one of the greatest plagues which can befal a man, by him as soon approved.

Quarll, having got her in the mind, was no wise dilatory to get it performed; but made diligent enquiry about the most convenient place in the country, for remoteness and cheapness; which being informed of, he forthwith takes horse, and having found a good old countryman, with his wife and daughter, in Yorkshire, whose diligent cares, and frugal living, whilst young and strong, had been rewarded with a moderate competence, to keep him from toiling when grown old; who, having a pleasant and commodious habitation, distant from meddling and infecting neighbours, and room to spare, were very glad to take in a gentlewoman to board, being some company for them in their remote living, and therefore stood upon no rate: which suiting Quarll's circumstances and wishes, he began to consult on means to keep his wife there for a constancy; and as he well knew she never would consent, nor he be able to force her to it by violence, he applies to stratagems. Thus, having given her the best character he could to the old people for good humour, he tells them, that indeed she had one failing, but that it was no wise troublesome, provided one gave her her way: she is very vapourish, and looks for great attendance. —'O dear! that's quality distemper.' 'Well, if that be all,' replied the old folks, 'she shall not want for any one 'thing.'—'More,' said he, 'I must 'caution you of, which is this: she will 'soon be tired of her lodging, and will 'be for returning to London; so will seek 'all opportunities to steal away, if she 'finds herself opposed in her desires: 'therefore it is best not to contradict her 'directly, but be sure watch her narrowly, lest she gives you the slip.'— 'Never fear,' replied the good people; 'we will take care of that: she never 'shall go one step alone. She is not 'apt to lay violent hands upon herself, 'and do herself a mischief?'—'No, no,' replied he, 'there is no danger of that; 'you may trust her alone within doors 'at any time, but never abroad. One

'thing

'thing more I muſt give you notice of; 'that is, when ſhe finds ſhe cannot get 'away, ſhe will be for ſending letters: 'I charge you, let her have no paper, 'only at firſt; to write to me once, or 'twice, or ſo; and that you will gueſs 'when proper, by her railing, which 'will be a token of her being diſcom-'poſed: and, as for her diet, ſhe is ſome-'thing dainty; but I ſee you have plenty 'of poultry, which ſhe loves very well.' —'O dear Sir,' anſwered the old wo-man, 'ſhe ſhall have fiſh, fleſh and fowl, 'when ſhe pleaſes. We have a fine 'pond in the ground, well ſtocked with 'fiſh; and cocks and hens enough, you 'ſee, about the yard; and for butcher's 'meat, it is but two or three hours ride 'to the next town.'

So Quarll having agreed, and paid one quarter before-hand, which he promiſed to do whilſt ſhe boarded there, he returns to London, in order to fetch his wife; who having projected a greatneſs of liv-ing in the country, which ſhe was diſ-appointed of in town, immediately in-quired into the appearance of the houſe, the handſomeneſs of the lodgings, and the gentility of the neighbours: to which queſtions Quarll took care to anſwer ſuit-able to her inclination. So, having con-cluded to go the next day, they went out to make proviſion of ſuch things as can-not well be had in the country; as Nantz brandy, ratafia, uſquebaugh, coffee, cho-colate, and ſuch things as were neceſſary for genteel company.

Being provided with every thing, they ſet out the next day; but, as neither lodgings, houſe, or neighbourhood, an-ſwered her ambition, nor his commen-dations, he contrived to arrive in the night, that ſhe might not find the deceit; and as the good people of the houſe, ac-cording to direction, ſhewed her abun-dance of reſpect, giving her the title of lady, and a good ſupper being prepared, ſhe inquired no further into the matter. The next morning, Quarll having repre-ſented to his ſpouſe, it would be of pre-judice to him, if he ſtayed any longer from his ſcholars, having already loſt ſix days, took his leave of her, and left her in bed, it not being her uſual time to riſe: ſo, having promiſed to be with her in a ſhort time, to ſee how ſhe liked her lodgings, he returned to London, having firſt renewed his charge to the good peo-ple of the houſe, of giving her her hu-mour; and, above all, not to let her go out alone, nor conſent to her coming up to London; which in a little time, he queſtioned not but ſhe would be very de-ſirous of.

Quarll being gone, the old people, ac-cording to their charge, were extraordinary diligent and careful in pleaſing their new lodger; who finding her ambition grati-fied by their obſervance, kept in that day: but the next morning, having a fancy to walk out, the young woman of the houſe took her to ſee the ground and cattle which belonged to them, as being the principal things ſhe could ſhew her; there being neither houſe nor habitation, but their own little cottage, within ſight. She, who thought her lodgings to be in a handſome and creditable houſe, near a genteel neighbourhood, with whom ſhe might converſe; finding the reverſe of her expectations, could not conceal her paſſion at the diſappointment; but falls a rail-ing againſt her huſband in ſuch a rage as frightened the poor young woman; who, doubting ſhe was going into one of her fits, ran home to fetch her father and mo-ther; who, being come, were as much frightened as their daughter, at her fu-rious countenance, the blood being ready to ſtart out of her face, and her eyes out of her head. Thus, fearing ſhe would grow unruly, each of them took hold of one of her arms, and ſo, in a manner, dragged her home; where, being come, they would have laid her upon the bed: but ſhe, who took this act of their caution for an effect of their careful attendance, told them, that indeed ſhe could not find fault with them; and that their habita-tion might ſuit their birth; but really it did not hers, which her huſband very well knew; and therefore ſhe never would forgive him for bringing her thi-ther, and that he ſhould ſoon know: ſo deſired them to give her paper and ink, if the houſe could afford ſuch a thing.

The good people, who had been cau-tioned to give her her humour in that at the beginning, having none at home, ſent the boy that attended their ſheep on horſeback to the next town for them; then, leaving her to compoſe herſelf, they retired to bewail among themſelves her miſ-fortune, which they perceived to be the effect of pride, reflecting upon the happineſs of their own condition, and the pleaſure of a contented life.

'Now,'

'* Now,' said they, 'she has been 'brought up in a city, where excess of 'pleasure and luxury are made the only 'means to arrive at content; but, alas! 'how widely do they miss their aim! 'Their life is a continued series of cares; 'their emulation and vanity in fashions, 'entertainments, and such like, together 'with their inseparable companion, envy, 'only contribute to make an unhappy 'life still more miserable. Here this 'gentlewoman wants for no manner of 'necessaries to make a life comfortable, 'but has rather a superabundancy. 'Could she reject that horrid pain-caus-'ing quality of pride, and learn a little 'humility, it is that brings content and 'sweetens all the misfortunes of this life. 'How preferable is our station to hers! 'How solid is the pleasure we enjoy in 'this solitary habitation, compared to 'the trifling joys the great ones possess 'in the most populous cities! O happy 'fields and silent groves! where nothing 'but eternal rounds of pleasure centre! 'Here no debaucheries, rioting, fashions, 'and luxurious entertainments; no 'envy of others good fortune, no drunk-'enness, swearing, and blaspheming the 'mercies of the Almighty God, ever 'take place, as in flourishing cities; but 'Providence gives us all things with a 'bountiful hand: in short, we have all 'we desire, and more than we justly de-'serve. Here the beauteous birds, joy-'fully hopping from bough to bough, 'stretch their tuneful throats, and war-'ble out melodious anthems to their 'great Creator's praise; whilst flowery 'hills, in harmonious echoes, repeat the 'same to the fruitful neighbouring vales. 'Here is nothing to be seen or heard but 'universal acclamations of praise to the 'great God of all things. This is the 'real solid pleasure; this is that makes 'us perfectly happy. For how much 'more eligible is the company of irra-'tional animals, or even inanimate 'things, than the society of men, who 'have divested themselves of all things 'but shape, whereby to distinguish them 'from the most deformed brutes, or, 'indeed, from more horrible devils? 'This gentlewoman has put us in mind 'of our own happiness, of which, before 'her coming, we were almost ignorant; 'but now we may see, that happiness 'consists not in riches, nor content in 'gaudy apparel.—But why do we tarry 'here? It is not proper to leave the gen-'tlewoman so long alone, left, in one of 'her fits, she should do herself a mis-'chief: therefore let one of us go to her.' So the good woman of the house went to her, and, finding her in tears, used all possible endeavours to divert her melan-choly, but all to no purpose; for still she was interrupted by exclamations against 'that villain! that rogue!' her husband. The good woman finding that words could not prevail, thought a glass of ra-tafia might do better; so desired her to comfort herself, and take a glass of her cordial; to which she soon consented, and after that four or five more, which had the desired effect; for her melancholy was by this time turned into most vio-lent fits of the spleen, and presently into drowsiness. The landlady, perceiving her condition, desired her to lie down, and refresh herself by taking a little sleep: so, laying her down upon her bed, and watching her to sleep, retired.

After she had slept an hour or two, she awakes, in a very splenetic humour, and calls to know the reason, why pen, ink, and paper were refused her. 'In-'deed,' said the old woman, 'we did not 'know that your ladyship was awake; 'and we did not care to disturb you; 'but I will bring it to you presently.' So went and brought it. Which she no sooner received, but she began to write the following letter:

'Most barbarous of men,

'WAS you afraid that my indispos-'tion (for which you most deceit-'fully did persuade me to leave London) 'would not kill me quick enough itself, 'that you have decoyed me to an oven, 'the dulness whereof is sufficient to 'make any well-bred dog pine itself to 'death; here not being a rational crea-'ture to talk to, but the insipid folks of 'the hut; who, being stript of their 'clumsy human shape, will be as com-'pleat brutes as their oxen and cows. 'Pray see that you forthwith fetch me 'hence, or expect to incur all the resent-'ment an injured wife can shew, as soon

* N. B. The lines marked with (') are set down word for word with his Memoirs, for these reasons. 1. I thought it a pity to alter any thing from his notions of the pleasures of a country life. 2. And the rather, because it gives us very lively ideas of the perfect happiness he enjoys in his solitude.

'as

'as arrived to London, where I shall 'surely come in a few days, though I 'was to travel all the way barefoot.

'Yours, &c.

'MARY QUARLL.'

This letter being wrote, the good people of the house were in a great consternation, whether they ought to send it or not; but after some consultation about the matter, they concluded it should go, lest her husband should take it amiss.

Quarll, who expected some such letter from his haughty dame, as soon as she had discovered the cheat, had, with a great deal of judgment, prepared the following answer:

'MY DEAR,

'IF your pride and vanity do outrun your 'reason, it is no argument my com- 'pliance to them should hasten my ruin: 'and if you consult your circumstances, 'as I do my ability, you will not dis- 'commend

'Your careful husband,

'PHILIP QUARLL.'

And with that, one to her landlord and landlady, whom he thanked for their care of sending the letter; but desired they would not trouble themselves with sending any more, nor give her opportunity of writing, seeing it did but aggravate her distemper; and, above all things, to have a particular care she should not give them the slip, and he would take care to gratify them for their trouble.

This obliging letter, together with a present of a pair of handsome green stockings, and lemon-colour gloves to the daughter, did so win the old folks affection, that they were extreme punctual in observing his orders: but that to his wife had a quite different success; for, instead of putting her into consideration, it set her into such a violent rage, as would scarce permit her to read it throughout: so, tearing it to pieces, she storms out—'Consider my circum- 'stances! vile wretch! let him behold 'my portion, whether it deserves me no 'better a being than a hovel!—Landlady, 'send immediately to the town, and get 'me a place in the stage against to-mor- 'row; for I will go and tear that villain 'to pieces.'

The good woman was not a little displeased to hear her thus despise her house, which was the best within a mile round; but as she imagined it was the effect of her vapours, instead of vindicating her house, which, though old and low built, was tolerable large, and very convenient, she seemed to acquiesce with her, wishing it had been better for her sake: but as for sending to take a place, it was then too late; for by that time a messenger could be got to town the office would be shut up; but that the next time she went out, she would take care a place should be taken: so excused it for that week. In the mean time she gave her her humour, being very respectful and observing; which, suiting her pride, made her something more easy, and in some measure diverted her raving fits; for she fully depended upon going the week following, but was again disappointed by one mishap or other, and so from time to time, till at last she began to doubt of their giving orders, meaning to keep her there: thus resolved to go herself; but not knowing the way, she desired somebody might be sent along with her; which they were ready to grant, but never could be had, being always out of the way, about some business or other.

This continuing for the space of a month, or more, and no news coming from London, she began to think it was a contrivance of her husband's to be rid of her with only paying for her board and lodging, which she understood he had done before-hand, and agreed to do so during her stay, which, very probably might be for her life; but resolved to disappoint him by privily stealing away, and at a venture seek out the road to the next town, not questioning but she should find somebody as she went that would direct her: but the old folks, having been warned of such an enterprize by her husband, were too vigilant to give her an opportunity of attempting it, never leaving her by herself from the time of her getting up to her going to her bed again: which over-attendance convinced her of her imprisonment.

Then finding herself curbed in her ambition, disappointed in her pride, and tricked out of her liberty, without hopes of being relieved; the letters she sent to her friends being intercepted; she falls into a passion suitable to her case and disposition; which having vented upon the people of the house for abetting and adhering to her perfidious husband in so traitorous a deed, her spirits being ex-

hauſted ſo prodigiouſly with raving, that nothing but a cordial dram could ever have brought them to their uſual tone, and which ſhe by long experience knew, calls for her grand ſpecific; and, after ſhe had drank three or four refreſhing glaſſes, ſhe became more eaſy, and retired to reſt: when, having ſlept a few hours, ſhe awakes ſomething better compoſed. Thus, conſidering that all the reſentment ſhe was capable to ſhew could not mend her condition; ſhe therefore concluded to make her landlord and landlady her friends, that if ſhe did not enjoy her liberty, as ſhe propoſed, ſhe might at leaſt enjoy a little more content in her confinement.

Thus ſhe reſolved, and indeed kept her reſolution a long time; laying aſide her haughty temper, and curbing thoſe violent paſſions ſhe had ſo long accuſtomed herſelf to, ſhe now began to be much more familiar and condeſcending, than what ſhe had hitherto ſhewn, to the great joy and ſurprize of the good people; who by this ſtrange alteration, were in great hopes her madneſs was wearing off; and, upon that account, were extremely induſtrious to humour her in every point; uſing her with all the good manners they were capable of: which ſhe eaſily perceiving, thought to make uſe of their credulity to her advantage; for ſhe was a woman of quick penetration: and, finding how egregiouſly thoſe ignorant people had been impoſed upon, in relation to her phrenzy, ſaw the only means to regain her liberty was to pretend a recovery. And, accordingly, by a counterfeit change of temper, endeavoured to perſuade the people into a good opinion of her; telling them, ſhe could never requite their extreme good ſervices to her during her indiſpoſition; and lamenting her own unhappineſs in being ſo troubleſome and fatiguing to perſons of ſo kind and obliging a behaviour. They, in like manner, anſwered, that if their poor ſervices had contributed any thing to her eaſe and recovery, they were ſufficiently made amends for all their trouble.

Now the ſcene was intirely changed; the raving, proud, ill-natured gentlewoman, became the moſt pleaſant, ſociable, and beſt-natured perſon they had ever met with: and they, who juſt before conceived ſo great a diſlike to her, were now ſo delighted with her company and converſation, that ſhe was leſs alone than formerly, they always contriving ſome diverſion or other to drive away her melancholy, and to prevent a relapſe; hoping to ſend the welcome news of her perfect recovery to her huſband: frequently pleaſing her with odd country tales; ſhewing her all the pleaſures their fields, gardens, and orchards could afford, with many other little contrivances to paſs the time away; while ſhe endeavoured to divert them with the comical adventures of the Londoners. This ſhe endured almoſt a whole month, with all the ſeeming good-nature imaginable; but finding herſelf in no way to procure her enlagement, and rather more ſtrictly guarded than formerly, reſolved to obtain her liberty by ſtratagem, which ſhe deſigned in the following manner.

There was a ſervant in the houſe, whoſe name was Thomas, and a lively, briſk, freſh-coloured young man, indeed a fellow of admirable ſenſe, and good manners: this ſpark was of a very amorous diſpoſition, well verſed in intrigues, and extremely obliging in his temper and behaviour: who, as ſoon as he ſaw Quarll's wife, began to think of his former way of living. Now this young fellow was born in London, of very mean parents, whoſe friends not being able to give him a trade, he was obliged to enter himſelf a member of the ancient and honourable ſociety of lacqueys. His firſt ſervice was to a widow gentlewoman, where he learnt all the neceſſary qualifications of his employ; but his miſtreſs being a very religious woman, going to church two or three times every day, where he was obliged conſtantly to attend her, and ſo much gravity not ſuiting his mercurial temper, ſoon obliged him to quit his poſt. But he being an arch wag, and ſly knave, ſoon advanced himſelf to be a footman to a young nobleman. Here he began to ſhew his genius; for his maſter, being a young gentleman very much delighted with love-adventures, frequently made uſe of him in thoſe caſes; and, finding him to be of a ſharp ready wit, very careful, and well ſkilled in taciturnity, ſoon made him ſecret meſſenger in ordinary to all his intrigues; in which ſtation he behaved himſelf admirably well, having all the accompliſhments neceſſary for ſo weighty a truſt, viz. vigilance, diſpatch, and ſecrecy; and theſe ſo well managed, that he ſeldom failed in his deſigns.

This

This poſt of honour he enjoyed for a long time, with great credit and reputation; and gained ſo great a ſhare in his maſter's affections, that he likewiſe made him firſt miniſter to all his affairs.

Now Tom is arrived to the very ſummit of his fortune; regaling himſelf in all kinds of pleaſure, beloved and truſted by his maſter, honoured and reſpected by his fellow-ſervants, and in ſhort, might be ſaid to be perfectly happy. But here that jilt, which ſo long flattered him with her kind embraces, at one fatal blow removes all the means whereby he aſcended, and puſhes him from the lofty precipice to the deepeſt ſink of poverty imaginable.

Tom's maſter being a lover of variety, his curioſity prompted him to ſee the diverſion of a country wake, in order to ſtart ſome freſh game; and, to that purpoſe diſguiſes himſelf like a plain country gentleman, and equipped his man Tom in the ſame garb, on purpoſe to make him his companion in his adventure. This place, where the wake was kept, was about ten miles from the nobleman's ſeat; ſo each mounted his horſe, and away they rode: when, being arrived at the town, nigh which they were to hunt their game, they both alight, and put up their horſes at an inn; and, having pulled off their boots, out they walk towards the place of rendezvous. As ſoon as they came within ſight of the place, they beheld the fields prettily beſpotted with different companies, at as many different diverſions. In one place a parcel of wreſtlers, eagerly contending, with broken ſhins, for a pair of gloves; in another, a company of cudgel-players, with batteredribs, fighting for a laced hat; ſome at one game, and ſome at another: but Tom and his maſter, who cared for neither broken ſhins, or bloody brows, reſolved to ſeek out ſofter combatants.

After they had walked up and down the field, ſeeing the ſeveral diverſions; 'Well, Tom,' ſays the young nobleman, 'where's our diverſion? Where 'are all our girls got to?' 'O,' ſays Tom, 'we ſhall be in with them pre'ſently. Hark, I hear the noiſe of 'cat-gut; and I warrant we find them 'there.' So following their ears inſtead of noſes, they came to a moſt ſpacious dome, vulgarly called a barn; which they no ſooner entered, but Tom ſays to his maſter—'Here, Sir, here's 'variety for you; here's nymphs of 'all ſorts and ſizes; and, faith, of all 'complexions; they're all clean and 'neat; all fit for the game: come, Sir, 'pick and chuſe: which pretty ſmiling 'rogue muſt be your nymph? Come, 'let's ſee what you'll do; for I long to 'be at it.'—'Do you long to ſee what 'I'll do?' ſays the nobleman; 'why I 'intend to work miracles; I ſhall make 'my nymph a goddeſs, before I leave 'her.'—'Well then,' replied Tom, 'I 'ſuppoſe I may take the privilege to 'make my girl a nymph, at leaſt.'

While they were thus talking, they ſtood like two hawks hovering over their prey, not knowing on which to fix their fatal talons; and the ruſticks ſtaring at them with open mouth, and diſtended noſtrils, not knowing what to think of them. At length Mr. Scrape, by tuning his melodious battered fiddle, ſummons all the girls to readineſs, each preparing her feet for the ſport; while every Hob began to ſeize a partner, and Tom and his maſter (in the mean time, you may be ſure) were not idle: for, offering their ſervice to a couple of pretty cherry-cheeked rogues, as Tom called them, the innocent girls very gladly accepted their offers, little dreaming their wicked intentions; but the miſchief was, the nobleman had got the girl which Tom had the moſt inclination to; which cauſed ſuch a ſecret envy in his breaſt, that became the fatal cauſe of his unfortunate diſgrace.

Now the dance was begun with great fury on both ſides; the girls romping and tearing, and the fellows pulling and hauling, and ſhoving, and kiſſing, and tumbling like ſo many mad devils; while Tom and his maſter, being ſtrangers to ſuch kind of diverſion, ſtood like two images, and the country fellows mocking them; which Tom obſerving, and ſeeing his partner very dull, thought they ſhould never out-do him in caterwauling: therefore, ſhrugging up his ſhoulders, and rubbing his eyes a little bit, he began to be as briſk as the beſt. The nobleman, obſerving his man Tom's alteration, thought proper to follow his example; ſo, puſhing down two or three girls, fell upon them, and kiſſed them till they were almoſt ſtifled; then hoiſting them up, extends his mouth to a full yawn, and laughs as loud, and with as great a grace, as any of them;

while Tom, to ſhew his activity, jumps about a yard high, always taking care to light upon ſomebody's toes; which generally put the whole company into a loud fit of laughter, except the perſon hurted; who, in compliance to the reſt, was obliged to put her mouth in a grinning poſture.

Thus they became the moſt facetious companions imaginable (every one praiſing the two gentlemen's good humour and activity) and, in ſhort, became the wonder of the whole company. But Tom and his maſter, having tired themſelves and their partners ſufficiently, began to think of retiring, in order to refreſh their weary limbs; and, motioning the ſame to their nymphs, the poor girls very willingly accompanied them. Now they thought themſelves ſecure of their intended ſport, and conducted them, for that purpoſe, to the inn where they had put up their horſes.

As ſoon as they were ſet down, they ordered wine to be brought, and a ſupper got ready, in order to detain and intoxicate the girls, if poſſible; and therefore they plied them very cloſe with liquor. Now Tom's partner, being a very briſk lively girl, never refuſed her glaſs; but the nobleman's was of a very mild, eaſy deportment, and would drink but little: he ſeeing her temper, began to be very amorous, on purpoſe to try what that would do; but ſhe, in ſo ſweet and eaſy a manner, checked his rudeneſs, that it raiſed in Tom a moſt violent paſſion for his maſter's partner. At length ſupper was brought to table, which was no ſooner over, but night began to appear: the two girls, perceiving the time, deſired leave to go home, which the nobleman abſolutely refuſed; but Tom, thinking to make ſure of his game upon the road, conſented to go with his partner; which the other hearing, begged not to be left alone, but that ſhe might go likewiſe: the nobleman, (thinking he had not brought her to the deſired pitch) as heartily deſired her to ſtay, vowing that nobody ſhould wrong or hurt her: but when the other gentleman returned, (meaning Tom) they would both conduct her home: ſo, by mere dint of argument, prevailed upon her to tarry till Tom's return.

Now Tom, as ſoon as he had got from the town, began to attack his fort, which, after a little parley, ſurrendered at diſcretion; ſo Tom razed the walls to the ground, entered the caſtle, and took poſſeſſion of the city: all which being tranſacted, he leaves her, promiſing to reviſit her the next day, and bends his haſty ſteps towards the inn, with a deal of impatience, muttering theſe words as he went—'What a blockhead was I to 'let my maſter be too nimble for me! 'Ah! fool that I was, to loſe ſo delicious 'a morſel, and take poſſeſſion of ſo eaſy 'a fool, who, as ſoon as aſked, con-'ſented; when the other, with all the 'pretty engaging airs, ſo modeſtly 'checks any thing that looks like rude-'neſs. Well, faith, ſince it is ſo, I'll 'make the beſt on't, and try whether I 'can't chouſe him of his partner.' So ſaid, ſo reſolved, and indeed ſo done

For, as ſoon as Tom came in, the girl claimed their promiſe; ſaying, the gentleman was ſo rude, that ſhe would ſtay no longer; deſiring them either to go home with her, or let her go by herſelf. But Tom, deſirous to renew the ſport, begged of her, with all the prevailing arguments he was capable of, to tarry; telling her, he was a little tired with the walk he had taken, and wanted to refreſh himſelf: ſo deſired her to ſtay, while he only took a glaſs, and he would go with her. The girl, very unwillingly, complied, and ſat down again. The nobleman, finding Tom had no mind to part with her, imagined he was bringing about what himſelf had ſo long endeavoured in vain; and therefore, pulling out his watch, he ſtarts up in haſte, and ſays he muſt needs go, for it was paſt the time that he promiſed to be at a certain place: ſo tells the innocent girl he very unwillingly left her; but he hoped this would not break their new acquaintance, for he would pay her a viſit in a ſhort time, deſiring to be excuſed for this time; and he believed he could prevail upon the other gentleman to conduct her home. Tom, who underſtood his meaning, follows him to the door, and there receives his charge, which was, that he ſhould bring her to a houſe they both knew, about three miles off, as ſoon as poſſible: ſo took his leave, mounted his horſe, and went thither, impatiently waiting for his prey.

Now Tom was extremely pleaſed with his maſter's intentions, reſolving to put the bite upon the biter; and as ſoon as the nobleman departed, began to attack the

the fortification with all the artillery wine and soft words could supply him with: but the defendant, proof to battery of this kind, held out nobly a long time, and moved strongly for a cessation of arms, desiring leave to go home: but Tom, acquainted with the various turns of intrigues, resolved not to lose his game, being well assured he should bring her to articles in a little time; and began a fresh attack, which lasted so long, that she was obliged to cry for quarters; but it being too late for going home, Tom persuaded her to lie there; assuring her, that he would see her well provided for; and so, in short, she blushingly consented.

Thus Tom, having gained his point, orders a bed to be got ready; and then desired his mistress, who was, by this time, much overcome with wine and sleep, to go to bed. The poor girl (still between doubt and fear) knew not what to say, but, trembling, denies what her looks desired; and, after a great many arguments on both sides, she resigns herself intirely to him. The sly knave, joyful of his prey, conducts his mistress to bed; but, as they were going, the old crafty innkeeper cries, in mere form—'I hope, Sir, that's your wife, for I 'would by no means have any thing 'dishonest done in my house.'—'Yes, 'yes,' (says our rogue) 'you may assure yourself it is my wife, or else I 'should not have offered to go to bed 'with her,' while the poor girl, hiding her face, ran up stairs as fast as she could.

They had not been long above, when the nobleman, uneasy at their delay, returns to the inn, and inquires after the couple he left. 'Why, Sir,' said the host, 'they're a-bed.'—'Abed!' says the nobleman, 'a-bed!'—'Yes,' answered he, 'it being too late to go home, 'they took up their lodgings here.'—'What! are they a-bed together?' said the gentleman.'—'Yes,' says the innkeeper; 'I left 'em together.' The nobleman, hearing this, stood like one thunderstruck, his eyes darting lightning and his blood all in flame; but, bridling his passion, very coolly inquired where they lodged, saying he had some business of moment to impart to the gentleman, and he must that minute speak to him. The innkeeper, unacquainted with his design, very complaisantly conducted him to their apartment; and knocking at the door, told Tom the gentleman was returned, and wanted to speak with him. Tom not being yet undressed, knowing his master's fiery temper, and the just resentment he was sure to meet with, opens the window, and out he jumps, without saying a word; and, having bruised himself with the fall, lay some time upon the ground; till, recovering himself a little, he precipitately got over the garden-wall, into which he had dropt from the window; and scours over the fields as fast as he could, without ever looking back.

But having run himself out of breath, and thinking himself out of danger, down he sits, reflecting upon his melancholy circumstances. 'O miserable 'wretch!' says he, 'what have I done? 'How dare I ever see my master, who 'always reposed his trust in me? And 'I, like a perfidious villain, to deceive 'him! Certain death attends me, if I 'go home; and, if I tarry here, there's 'nothing but beggary or starving; I 'have at once lost all credit and reputation, and see nothing but ruin, unavoidable ruin. O woman, woman! 'cursed bewitching woman! what an 'infinite number of mischiefs are you 'the source of! But why do I exclaim 'against a woman so innocent, and so 'charming, when I, the traiterous deceiver, sought nothing but her eternal 'misery? O just Heaven! 'twas you 'that saved her from impending ruin, 'and deservedly threw all the fatal effects upon myself: well, I'll bear them 'patiently; load me with all the evils 'you can bring, till they mount so high 'you can lay no more.' Raving and cursing in this manner, he tired his spirits, and fell asleep.

Having slept some time, he awakes, wondering where he was: 'Did I dream,' says he, 'or is it real? No, it must certainly be true; I am the most wretched 'mortal breathing. The very same ruin 'I intended the poor innocent girl, has justly fallen upon myself; and what is 'become of her I know not, nor dare I 'to inquire; but I hope, as Heaven has 'hitherto protected her, it will likewise 'preserve her from the evil intents of 'my master.' Reflecting upon himself in this manner, he walked about till day-light, not knowing what to do, or whither to go: he was not a great way from London, destitute of friends or acquaintance, little or no money in his pocket,

pocket, and durſt not ſee his maſter. Deſpairing in this condition, he ſaw a company of haymakers going to work, it being ſummer-time; and reſolves to make one of their number, if poſſible; hoping by that means to keep himſelf from ſtarving, and work his paſſage up to London.

With this reſolution he attacks the haymakers, aſking them from whence they came, and whither they were going: which they anſwered very civilly, telling him they came from London, and were going towards the North of England: ſo, being baulked in his expectation of coming to London along with them, he knew not what to do; but at laſt reſolves to go along with them, hoping to meet ſomething in his way that might make his journey pleaſant; ſo tells them his reſolution to make one amongſt them: but they, ſeeing a man genteelly dreſſed petitioning for a poor haymaker's place, took him to be only in jeſt, and told him they ſhould be glad of ſuch a companion, if he ſpoke as he thought. He proteſted to them the ſincerity of his intention, telling them his misfortunes drove him to ſuch low circumſtances. They then ſaid they ſhould be very glad to ſerve him, and that their maſter would be in the field by-and-by, and he would hire him, for he wanted hands: ſo he went with them, and tarried till the old farmer came, who, finding a well-dreſſed young fellow wanting an employment of that kind, aſked him a great many queſtions, which Tom anſwered very pertinently: the farmer, therefore, taking it only as a frolick, was willing not to baulk him, and ſo hired him, ſaying, he might go to work that very day, if he would; but Tom, wanting a fork, told him, that as ſoon as he could get his tools in readineſs he would come; ſo hires a man to go to the next town to buy him one, with which, as ſoon as bought, he falls to work very pleaſantly.

Tom went with them from place to place, conforming himſelf to their cuſtoms in every point, being a very merry companion, and much beloved by his fellows: his preſent life became much pleaſanter than his former, never inquiring after his maſter, or country girl, nor did he know what was become of them. At laſt, it fell to his lot to be hired by the farmer he then worked for; who, ſeeing him a tractable, briſk young fellow, aſked him whether he would be his ſervant; for he then wanted one. Tom, after a little heſitation, told him he ſhould be glad of ſuch a maſter; ſo ſtruck a bargain, and hired himſelf for a year.

Tom had not been there much above half a year, before Quarll's wife came down thither, who, being a genteel London madam, reminded him of his former intrigues, and raiſed in him an inclination for her; but being in ſo humble a ſtation, he dared not attack the haughty dame, till he might find a favourable opportunity; and ſo took all occaſions to oblige her, and was better reſpected by her than any of the others, ſhe often ſaying, that that fellow had a certain *Je-ne ſcai quoi* in him, which at once claimed love and reſpect. Tom, underſtanding this, thought time would certainly bring about his purpoſe; which not long after happened in this manner.

Tom, during her alteration of temper, had more liberty of converſe than before, and often diverted her with entertaining ſtories; and one day, being alone with her, opened to her the whole ſeries of his paſt fortunes and misfortunes, which ſhe heard with great attention and pleaſure; for Tom had never before diſcovered himſelf to any; but, thinking to gain credit with this gentlewoman, made her only privy to it. When Tom was gone, ſhe began to reflect on the fellow's dexterity; and, believing him well ſkilled in all kind of adventures, thought he might be a fit inſtrument for her eſcape, and reſolved to adviſe with him about it: accordingly, the next day took an opportunity to call him to her again, when ſhe was alone, deſiring him to divert her with ſome of his merry tales, telling him ſhe was then very melancholy. 'Madam,' ſays Tom, 'I am ſorry I ſhould 'find you melancholy; but I'll do all 'I can to pleaſe you.'—'Ay,' ſays ſhe, 'if you knew the occaſion of my melan'choly, you would pity me, as well as 'be ſorry; but you cannot be ignorant 'what a priſoner I am made here, how 'conſtantly I am attended, and have 'ſcarce any thing but brutes to ſpeak to. 'I can aſſure you, that this uſage is 'enough to make me as mad as the peo'ple take me to be; for I never was 'brought up in this manner, which my 'huſband knows; it is only a contriv'ance of his to keep me here a cloſe 'priſoner, if poſſible; but I'll deceive 'him: for if a woman's invention can 'find any means to eſcape this curſed 'place,

'place, he shall be sure to see me in 'London quickly, and that to his great 'mortification.'

The sly rogue heard her very quietly, and thought he might now have his desired ends; so tells her she should be released that very night, if she pleased, and he himself would accompany her to London; for he longed to be there again. She was glad to hear him say so; and asked by what means he intended to convey her thence. 'O Lord!' says he, 'easy 'enough. I'll tell you how: I'll take a 'ladder, and set it against your window, 'and so come into your room, and take 'your cloaths, and every thing you have 'a mind to send to London, and carry 'them to a particular acquaintance of 'mine; then I'll come back and fetch 'you, and conduct you to the next 'town, which is not above five or six 'miles off, and stay there for the stage-'coach, and so both go to London to-'gether.' The gentlewoman, willing to get her liberty at any rate, agreed to the proposal, only desiring another day to look after all her things, and pack them up conveniently, because she would not hurry herself, lest they should mistrust, and stop her journey.

Tom consented to what she said, and wished for the approaching time; which being come, and all things in readiness, he brings the ladder, and mounts up towards the room; while she as readily delivers him, from the window, all her baggage ready packed up; which Tom takes and carries away, and presently returns to fetch the gentlewoman; who, overjoyed to think herself freed from that tiresome place, gets out of window, and began to descend the ladder; but, being over-eager, and not used to enterprizes of that kind, her foot slipped, and down she tumbles, ladder and all; which Tom seeing, knew the consequence, and ran away as he could, leaving Mrs. Quarll to get up by herself; for the ladder, in tumbling, broke the windows where the old farmer lay, and made an horrid noise, so that it scared the good man out of his sleep, who got up to see what was the matter; and, perceiving the gentlewoman's window open, and a fellow running cross the yard, cries out—'Murder! Thieves! thieves!' which alarmed the whole family; some getting pitchforks, some pokers; some one thing, some another, in order to scare the thieves; but the old man, with his fowling-piece in hand, like a noble commander, led the van, searching all his house over for thieves, and to see what he had lost, carefully looking into every hole and corner, not daring to advance too fast, for fear of a surprize; and coming to Mrs. Quarll's room, whose window he had seen open, calls to her a long time; but, hearing no answer, fancied she was murdered, and therefore breaks open the door, and searches the room; but there was no Mrs. Quarll to be found: they stared one at another, not knowing what to think. However, when they had examined all the house, they boldly sallied into the yard to hunt the thieves there; and looking about, they perceived something under the ladder, which looked like womens cloaths; so taking it up, they pulled from under it a real woman, something like Mrs. Quarll; and, looking more narrowly, perceived it to be the very same individual person, almost dead with the fright, and the bruises she had received.

And now their greatest wonder was, how she came thither. The old man said, he believed that some thieves had gotten into the house, and, to prevent her crying, had stopped her mouth, and thrown her out of the window. 'But,' says another wiseacre, 'how came she to have her cloaths 'on? I am sure she ought to have been 'a-bed. Now,' adds he, 'I believe the 'devil tempted her to throw herself out 'at window; and that must certainly be 'he you saw run cross the yard so swiftly.' Thus they disputed a long time, but at last agreed, that she ought to be carried to bed again, and have care taken of her: and so carried her up stairs; and then went to finish their search, while the good old woman and her daughter undressed her, got her to bed, and sat up with her all that night.

After all was finished, the old man, willing to know what quantity of men he had lost, calls a general muster; and, finding Tom missing, wondered where he was got to, asking if he lay at home that night. They told him—'No;' but they believed he was gone a sweethearting. 'A sweethearting!' says the old fellow; 'well, let him be there always; for 'he shall never come hither again: how 'do I know but he has sent the thieves 'to rob me, or that he is not one of them 'himself? If he ever comes hither, I'll 'turn him about his business as soon as 'I see him.' But Tom understood better things than to come thither again; for he

he knew the adventure would be blown, and then he ſhould be certainly diſcarded with diſgrace; ſo was reſolved to make the beſt of what he had got; went away, and was never heard of again.

Mrs. Quarll, as ſoon as come to her ſpeech, confeſſes the whole intrigue, and lays the blame upon her huſband; ſaying, he ſent her thither to be murdered; and now he had his deſired end, only that ſhe was the unhappy cauſe of her own death. The old man, as ſoon as he knew the matter perfectly, writes to her huſband a full account of the whole ſtory; telling him, he was in a fair way to loſe his wife; and that, if it ſhould ſo happen, he had no occaſion to ſend for his wife's cloaths, for ſhe had before loſt them; and tells him by what means. Quarll, as ſoon as he had the letter, was very much troubled at his wife's folly; but reſolved, if ſhe recovered, ſhe ſhould tarry ſome time without cloaths; which he knew would be puniſhment enough to her pride: ſo writes back to them, that they ſhould take all poſſible care to reſtore her to her health, and likewiſe to prevent any thing of that kind for the future; telling them, that in a little time he would ſend her ſome cloaths, and make them amends for their trouble.

Mrs. Quarll, in about a month, began to be upon the mending hand; which her huſband being informed of, reſolved to make her ſtay another month without cloaths, which he knew would be a greater puniſhment than the other month of ſickneſs. But here he was miſtaken; for it was almoſt three months before ſhe perfectly recovered; who, finding that, before that time, her huſband had ſent her ſome fine new cloaths, was, in great meaſure, reconciled to him; and reſolved, during her ſtay there, to be much more eaſy in her mind than before.

The good people, whom ſhe had often feared with her outrageous paſſion, were very glad to ſee her ſo calm, and took that opportunity to repreſent to her the happineſs of her condition; being well attended, and as well provided with all neceſſaries, free from that ſubjection ſhe might be under, if with her huſband, whoſe croſs and ill humours ſhe would be obliged to bear with: beſides twenty other vexations incumbent to a married life, from which ſhe was screened by his being from her.

The old woman's wiſe remonſtrances being backed with the ſudden arrival of a freſh ſupply of ſeveral ſorts of choice drams, as alſo the enſuing quarter's money for her board, and the ſeaſon rendering the country extremely agreeable, made her patiently ſubmit to continue there till the fall of the leaf; againſt which time ſhe would contrive ſome way or other to go, if her huſband did not come for her.

But Quarll, who ever ſince her being in the country, had enjoyed the uncontrouled pleaſures of a ſingle life, having no mind to interrupt them by her preſence, took care to ſecure her there; ſending her guardians now and then freſh charge to be watchful over her, and a ſmall preſent to encourage them to it.

But ſurly Fate, who was ever averſe to his happineſs, ſuggeſts a new interruption thereto. Quarll, having given over houſe-keeping, happened to come and live at a mantua-maker's of vaſt buſineſs, and reputed worth money. She was a ſingle woman, pretty handſome, but intolerably proud and conceited; which was the cauſe of her being ſtill unmarried, thinking herſelf too good for any tradeſman, or any thing below a gentleman; which ſeeing no proſpect to get, being courted by none, ſhe became a general man-hater: but Quarll, who was an handſome young man, and of a genteel employ, though not a gentleman, coming to lodge at her houſe, reconciled her to the ſex in a little time, and made her change her reſolution never to marry, heartily wiſhing he would court her: therefore, by her more than common attendance for a lodger, did all ſhe could to give him invitation, but all to little ſucceſs; for Quarll, who had been already twice incumbered in the troubleſome ſtate of matrimony, and but lately rid of his laſt plague, had no mind to venture any more; ſo did not anſwer her expectation: but her love increaſing daily, without being taken notice of, ſhe was obliged to declare it to an old gentlewoman, who lodged in the next room to him; who, having doubtleſs been in the ſame condition, was, by experience, capable to give her advice.

The old gentlewoman (as it is peculiar to them, when part the ſport themſelves, to love to promote it in others) took upon her the management of that affair; and from that time watched the opportunity of ſpeaking to him, which was only in the morning before he went out, or at night when he came home, being

ing abroad all the day beside: so, having resolved upon it, the next morning she leaves her own door open, which was opposite to his, waiting his coming out, to invite him to a dish of chocolate, which she had ready for that purpose.

Having, according to her desire, got him into her chamber, as he was drinking his dish, she feigns a fit of laughing. 'You wonder,' said she, 'what 'tis I 'laugh at; but, I dare say, you'll laugh 'as well as I, when you know: why, 'our man-hater is in love at last; in love 'up to her ears, as sure as you are alive.' —'Our man-hater, Madam!' says he; 'who is that?'—'Don't you know?' replied she: 'why, our landlady, who 'has refused so many fine offers. Lord, 'how happily might that woman have 'married! She might have rode in her 'coach years ago; but no man was good 'enough for madam: this had such a 'fault, and that another: in short, none 'could please her. 'Tis true, indeed, she 'is very deserving: the worst part of her 'is in the sight, and that you know is 'not disagreeable; but did you see what 'a fine body she has, you would be ready to run mad for her: surely she has 'the finest leg and foot that ever woman 'went on; and, for a skin, she may 'challenge the whole sex: in short, she 'is fit for a king's embraces. She has 'several good properties besides; and 'one above all, which perhaps you'll 'say is the principal; she has money, and 'a great deal: well, that will soon be 'disposed of, I dare say; I wish I knew 'on whom: sure it must be some angel; 'for I have heard her find fault with very handsome men that have addressed 'to her. Pray, did you ever observe any 'man to come here? He must be the 'person; for all her concerns are with 'women.'—'Indeed,' replied Quarll, 'I never take notice who comes: besides, I am seldom at home; so have 'not an opportunity to make observations.'—'But I have,' said she; 'and 'made it my business to mind; yet never saw any man in this house since I 'came, but you: suppose you should be 'he at last?'—'O Madam, there is no 'danger,' answered Quarll; 'she, who 'has refused so many rich matches, will 'hardly set her mind on a poor singing-'master.'—'How do you know that?' replied the old lady: 'love comes by 'fancy, and marriage by fate, and it 'may be yours to have her: so I would 'have you cultivate her love, which I 'could almost swear you possess; you 'will find it worth your while: here is 'an agreeable woman in an extraordinary good business, a house well furnished, and I'll warrant money-bags 'well filled: now, if you are disposed 'to make your fortune, here is a fair 'opportunity.' Quarll was sadly puzzled what answer to make. His present circumstances prompt him to soothe what his condition obliges him to deny: his business slackens, and his charges no-wise lessen: his income is dubious, and expences certain; the most prevailing arguments to embrace the offer. But then a strong obstacle starts up; a wife: but she is out of the way, and as good as dead, whilst her living is paid for, which this proposed marriage will enable him to do, though other business failed. That objection being removed, his answer was, He feared that happiness would be above his aspiring to; which being according to the mediatress's wish, she promised him her assistance. So he took his leave, and went about his daily affairs, leaving the management of that to her; who immediately went to inform the amorous landlady of her success.

Quarll being returned at night, the old lady, pursuant to the business she had taken in hand, follows him to his chamber, with the joyful news, that she had, by her landlady's blushing, discovered what her modesty would have concealed; that he was the man beloved; and, therefore, she would not have him delay his being made happy. To which he answered, As she had been the first cause of his happiness, he left the accomplishment thereof to her direction. 'Well, 'then,' said she, 'if I have the ordering of it, it shall be done next Sunday, 'as being, of all the week, the most 'blessed day.' And so bid him good night.

The old gentlewoman, being made sole directress of that affair, was very diligent in the accomplishment thereof; so had them married on the day she had proposed. The business was done privately, but the joy it produced could not be concealed: every body read Bride in the new-married wife's face; so that greetings daily filled the house; which, for a month, was a residence for mirth; and, during the space of a year, the seat of happiness; Peace kept the door, and Plenty attended them. But churlish Fate,

which ever perſecuted him, would not permit that happy ſtate to continue; and, the more to aggravate his loſs, makes Love, the chief author of his bliſs, now the principal inſtrument of his ſorrow; jealouſy, the greateſt plague that can befal a married life, infects his wife. She is upon thorns whilſt he is abſent, and uneaſy when preſent, with the fears of what he had done abroad: a diſcontented mind often urges the utterance of vexatious words, and breeds jarrings, enemies to Peace; which, being often diſturbed, leaves her abode, which is immediately taken up by Strife, and is commonly attended with ruin, the decreed influence of poor Quarll's ſurly fate. Buſineſs falling off from both their hands, makes them negligent of the little they have: the huſband diverts his cares abroad, whilſt the wife drinks away her ſorrow at home. Thus money growing ſcant, credit muſt be pledged; which, being not redeemed, expoſes the owner to diſgrace, which is commonly the poor man's lot.

The mercer and ſilkman, with whom his wife dealt before ſhe was married, having received money but once ſince her marriage, and ſeeing her diſcontent, imagined her huſband (who appeared ſomething too airy for one of her ſedate years) was the occaſion thereof, by his extravagant ſpending what ſhe, with much care and frugality, had ſaved, arreſted him, without giving him notice; leſt, being warned, he ſhould get away what ſhe might have left, and then abſcond.

Quarll, who till then had kept ſecret his being in the guards, where he continued, to screen him from thoſe debts his eloped wife might contract, is now obliged to let it be known, to keep himſelf out of gaol.

His proud wife, who thought men of the beſt and genteeleſt trades inferior to her merits, ſeeing herſelf at laſt married to one, whoſe ſtation was looked upon to be as odious as that of a common bailiff, fell into ſuch a paſſion that it caſt her into a violent fit; from which being recovered, ſhe flies out of the houſe in a great fury, ſwearing by all that was good, ſhe would no more live with a foot ſoldier; ſo left him in a ſad confuſion: yet he ſtayed in the houſe, hoping ſhe would, when cooler, conſider of it, and be reconciled.

But great was his ſurprize, when next morning, inſtead of his wife's coming according to expectation, a judgment is ſerved upon the goods of the houſe, at the ſuit of an upholſterer; ſo the houſe being entirely unfurniſhed, he was obliged to ſeek new lodgings, where he continued a full quarter without hearing of his wife.

Quarll, hoping his wife had left him in good earneſt, indulges himſelf with the thoughts of being a third time delivered from the greateſt incumbrance that can involve a man; wondering how he could ſo often fall into the ſame ſnare. 'Three wives,' ſaid he, 'in three years! 'and every one equal plagues, though 'of a different nature! The firſt a whore, 'of whom I was moſt luckily rid by 'accident: the ſecond a proud, lazy, in'dolent creature; ſhe by ſtratagem is ſe'cured: and the third a conceited jea'lous wretch; to her oſtentation I owe 'my deliverance. Well, now I am once 'more free, I'll take care how I hamper 'myſelf again:' ſo makes a ſtrong reſolution, let what would happen, to live ſingle from that time ever after.

But his reſolution, though ever ſo ſtrong, cannot avert Fate's irrevocable decree: a fourth wife is allotted him, which will bring upon him more vexation and trouble than he has yet gone through; his peace will not only be broken, and his eaſe diſturbed, but his life muſt be in jeopardy.

One evening that he was diverting his colonel, and the reſt of his club, with ſinging at the tavern, as he uſually did once a week, the landlady (who was then in company) much praiſed his voice and ſkill: the gentlemen took that opportunity to propoſe a match between Quarll, who went for a batchelor, and her, being a widow: all the company liked the propoſal, and earneſtly urged on the match.

Quarll, being a briſk, handſome, genteel young man, which qualifications have a vaſt aſcendant upon the ſex, eſpecially on widows, made a conſiderable impreſſion upon the hoſteſs; who, being already above forty, was willing to intermix her ſupernumerary years with thoſe of an huſband of a leſſer age: ſo, turning to jeſt what ſhe heartily wiſhed to be in earneſt, anſwers, in a joking manner, that Mr. Quarll doubtleſs had, before that time, made a better choice; ſo would hardly agree to their propoſal. 'A better choice!' ſaid the gentleman, 'I deny that:—here's a handſome jolly 'woman,

'woman, a noble houſe well-accuſtomed, 'a cellar well ſtocked with good wine, and 'bags doubtleſs well filled with money: 'I ſay he cannot make a better choice, 'nor ſhall he make any other; ſo here's 'to it's good ſucceſs:' Thus he drinks to her, who, in a joking way, puts it about. The glaſs having been round, 'Now, Mr. Quarll,' ſaid the colonel, 'let us have a love-ſong to conclude the 'matter.'

Quarll, who thought the gentlemen had been but in jeſt, in his heart wiſhed it could turn to earneſt. The notion of a good eſtabliſhment, and proſpect of a conſiderable advantage, having blanched over thoſe great obſtacles his preſent low circumſtances, and elevated condition, made him overlook, he did all he could to forward what had been propoſed: ſo having, according to requeſt, given the landlady a love-ſong, he goes and ſalutes her with an hearty kiſs; who, ſmiling, aſked him, Whether he thought ſhe was to be purchaſed with a ſong? To which he replied, the ſong was only to expreſs the thoughts of his heart, which he offered to purchaſe her love. 'Indeed,' ſaid ſhe, in a pleaſant manner, 'I do not 'know what your thoughts may be; 'but I never heard more agreeable ex- 'preſſions.'—'Well then, widow,' ſaid theſe gentlemen, 'you cannot, in gra- 'titude and good manners, but anſwer 'them kindly.'—'Indeed, gentlemen,' ſaid ſhe, 'I can ſay no more, but that 'they are mighty pretty words, and 'charmingly ſung.'—'Well then,' replied the colonel, 'I'll ſay the reſt for 'you. The lover having expreſſed his 'paſſion in ſo ſoft terms, and engaging 'a way, you cannot, without doing 'violence to your good nature, deny 'him what he requeſts in ſo melting a 'manner; nor ſhall; I ſay the word: 'which was confirmed by all the com- 'pany.' To which ſhe making no anſwer, it was taken for granted. So the marriage being concluded on, the next day was fixed upon for the performance thereof; being reſolved not to adjourn till it was over, they beſpoke a ſplendid ſupper, and ſo ſpent the night merrily.

The wedding was kept all the week, during which time, every gentleman was profuſe in his expences, for an encouragement to the new-married couple, whoſe trade increaſed daily.

Their proſperous beginning ſeemed to promiſe an happy life, living in love and peace at home, and being in good repute and credit abroad; but the ſame fate, which all along haunted poor Quarll, is ſtill at his heels; his bliſs was but a blaſt. His eloped wife unfortunately happened to go by as he was going out: ſhe had him immediately in her eye, which as ſpeedily conveyed him to her heart. The addition which a charming new ſuit of cloaths he then had on, made to his natural handſomeneſs, put out of her mind the cauſe of that diſdain ſhe had conceived for him, and turns it into a more paſſionate love than ever. She cannot live any longer from him; ſhe muſt have him with her at any rate, and will not reſt till ſhe finds out his lodgings; from whence ſhe reſolves to waſh all ſorrow away with her tears, and ſettle him again in her arms. So ſhe ſtraight goes to the tavern ſhe ſaw him come out of, ſuppoſing it might be a houſe he conſtantly uſed, on purpoſe to inquire where he lodged.

The new wife, who was then in the bar, to whom ſhe applied, perceiving in her ſome ſort of diſorder, was very inquiſitive to know her buſineſs; in which the poor woman refuſing to ſatisfy her, ſhe told her that he lived there, and that ſhe was his wife; and therefore the fitteſt to know her concern. At theſe moſt dreadful words, ſhe falls, like one thunder-ſtruck, on the ground, deprived of all her ſenſes; and, for a conſiderable time, lies as though bereft of life.

This dull ſcene turns the new wife's paſſion into commiſeration; and ſhe pities that misfortune which in her mind ſhe before condemned as a crime. 'This,' ſaid ſhe, 'is a true ſign of love, which 'a harlot is not capable of: I cannot 'blame her for loving him, but rather 'condole her misfortune.' So, having ordered fair water and hartſhorn drops to be brought, gave her ſome in a glaſs of water, which in a ſmall time fetched her a little to life; who, recovering, cried out—'Had I not been ſo bewitched as 'to go from him, he would not have 'left me.' Theſe words in a moment turned the officious condoler into a revengeful rival, who immediately imagined ſhe had lately lived with him as a miſtreſs, and, doubtleſs, would endeavour to do the ſame again: ſo, giving her hand (which ſhe kindly held before) a ſcornful toſs from her, 'Why, you

'vile woman,' said she, 'would you 'have him to live for ever in whoredom?' —'You judge me wrong, Madam,' replied the poor afflicted woman; 'I am his 'lawful wife.' So produces her certificate (which she happened to have about her) which caused almost as much disorder in the beholder, as she herself was lately in.

Having recovered her speech, which the late surprize had obstructed, she asked her, in a violent passion, why she had been so base as to give him the opportunity to come and cheat her, by her leaving him; for she was his wife also? To which she answered, that she could justify her going from him, though indeed she had great provocation, he not proving the man she took him to be. 'What!' replied she in the bar, 'was he not man 'enough for you? I think you are very 'hard to please: however, since the deceit made you leave him, why do you 'disturb yourself about him? He has 'not deceived me, unless it be in having a wife before: but as you left him 'of your own accord, he had no more 'to do with you.'—'No!' replied she, in a passion; 'but he shall find, and so 'shall you, that I have to do with him.' So went away.

It being then about noon, his usual time to come home from market, she went into a publick house opposite to the tavern, there to wait his return, which was a little after. As soon as she saw him, she gave him a call over.

The sudden and unexpected sight of the only obstacle to the happiness he then enjoyed, was most terribly shocking to him: he wished he had met with death to have missed her; but to no purpose: she had him in her eye, and was fully resolved to have him in her arms ere she went; and as he did not come as quick at her call as her impatience required, she attempted to go over to him; but Quarll, who knew her fiery temper, was afraid she should break out in a passion in the street; which would have exposed him, and brought it to his new wife's knowledge, being near home: so hastens over to the house she was in, to prevent her coming; and, judging his beginning to upbraid her with her elopement would, in some measure, moderate her railing at him, he tells her, as he enters the room—'I hope, Madam, you have, by 'this time, found a man more to your 'mind.' This was sufficient to provoke a milder temper to reproach him with his adulterous marriage, of which she was too certain: hers is but a fault, but his a crime. But as reproaches are not proper means to advance a reconciliation, which was her intent, she bridles her passion, and forces her nature to a submission; so throws herself at his feet, and falls a weeping; owning she had committed a fault, for which she heartily repented, and promised to atone by her future behaviour; calling Heaven to witness her chastity during her most unhappy separation.

Quarll, being of a compassionate temper, was soon made flexible by her tears: so takes her up by the hand, who as soon fell into his arms, incapable of speaking for weeping; but Quarll, who was in haste to be gone, being waited for at home, it being about his time of dinner, complied with the poor afflicted woman's crying and sobbing, whose chief request was, that he would only see her home that time: which he presently granted, to be quit of her; so ordered a coach to be called.

His new wife at home, being uneasy at his staying beyond his time, came to the door to look whether she could see him come. At that most unlucky time he was handing his other wife into the coach; which she unfortunately spying, ran over, as swift as a hawk flies after his prey, and pulls him back by the lappet of his coat, as he was stepping into the coach after her. The disorder this second surprize put him in, obliged him to go again into the house he just came out of, where she immediately followed him, raving and railing as much as the provocation and her passion did allow, leaving in the coach his former wife; who, by that second terrible surprize, was again struck speechless, and like one bereft of sense.

The coachman having waited some time, being impatient, calls in the house, desiring the gentleman to make haste, or else to allow him for waiting; at which, the new wife comes out in a violent passion, and bids him be gone, for he was not wanted. 'What shall I do with 'the gentlewoman in my coach?' said he; 'you had best take care of her; she 'is not well; or tell me where I shall 'carry her.'—'Carry her to the devil, 'an you will,' said she; and so went in. —'You may carry her there,' replied the surly coachman; 'you best know

'the

'the way.' So goes to the coach and shakes her till she comes to herself: then, taking her up in his arms, 'I am bid 'to carry you to the devil,' said he; 'but I believe you are able to go your-'self; so I will set you down here, that 'you may take your own time.' Having set her down, he then drives away. There being a milliner's shop just by, she goes in, desiring leave to sit awhile, till she was able to go. She had scarce been there three minutes, but she sees her husband handing his new wife over, very complaisantly; which so exasperated her, that she fully resolved upon revenge; chusing he should be hanged, rather than her rival should enjoy him: so went directly, and took out a warrant, which she immediately served, and had him before a justice of the peace, who committed him forthwith to Newgate.

The following sessions happening to be extraordinary great, by the vast number of criminals, his trial, and several more, were put off until the next; so that he was confined at the time he used to send the money for his wife's board in the country: and not daring to employ any acquaintance in that affair, lest they should enquire into the occasion of his sending that money; he desired one who often came to visit a prisoner, to do him that favour; which he readily promised, but did not perform: so that the people in the country, who were used to be paid a quarter before-hand, were a quarter in arrear: which, with the boarder's pressing importunity to come up to London, made them at last resolve upon it; where, being arrived, they immediately enquired after the unfortunate Quarll, whose imprisonment they soon heard of, as also of the cause thereof.

This did not a little exasperate the already sufficiently-provoked inquisitress; who, precisely imagining, with good reason, that his confining her in the country was merely for that intent, resolved to prosecute him according to the utmost rigour of the law; wondering who that good person was that had him apprehended: so went and consulted her friends, who advised her not to let her husband know of her being in town till his trial came on; and then she should know the prosecutor, and, at her own discretion, back the prosecution.

In the mean time, his first wife, who had lately been dismissed, (the knight who kept her being not long since married to a vast fortune) having heard of Quarll's being in Newgate, went straight to visit him. Her grief and his surprize at her coming, stopped, for some time, the utterance of both their minds: at last Quarll, who had just reason to tax her as the author of his present misfortune, reproached her with her leaving him, which was the original cause thereof. The innocent, yet guilty Sally, whose inclination, disposition, and resolution, had been violated, related the dismal account of her fatal ravishment; and pleaded her cause with such a prevailing eloquence, as new-kindled his former love, and made him (though the sufferer) give it on her side.

Being thoroughly reconciled, and having spent some hours in expressing both their griefs, they at last parted, after a thousand cordial embraces; and, as she was enabled, by the settlement the knight had made upon her, she supplied him with money and necessaries during his confinement in Newgate; and was with him constantly every day, almost from morning till night; and, when he was called upon his trial, she attended in the court more concerned than if she herself had been arraigned.

The sessions being commenced, he was first called to the bar: his indictment being read, he desired to be heard by his counsel, which was granted. The deponent having proved her marriage, required the prisoner at the bar should be obliged to live with her, or allow her a sufficient maintenance, as being his first wife: at which she whom he kept in the country starts up—'That belongs to me,' said she; 'I am the first wife:' so produces her certificate. A third wife appearing, startles both the judges and the prisoner, who thought her secure.

Sally, who till then had been silent, seeing the priority of marriage so much pleaded for, thought it might be worth her while to claim it, being her right, which she may chance to turn to the prisoner's advantage; so addressing to the bench—'My lords,' said she, 'I did 'not think to apply for justice; but see-'ing these women contending for that 'which belongs to neither of them, I 'think myself obliged to claim my 'right: I am the first wife, and please 'your lordships.'—'How! a fourth wife, 'and indicted but for two!' said the judges in a great surprize. 'Why, my 'lords,' replied an old surly judge upon the bench, 'if truth be known, he has 'half a score; I see it in his looks:

'these

'these smock-faced young fellows are 'so admired by the women, that they 'have not power to refuse any thing.' Sally, who thought to do the prisoner service, in taking the privilege of first wife into her own hands, finding the success of her good intent quite reversed, heartily repented appearing, and would have withdrawn, but that the judges told her she was now become the prosecutrix, and was obliged to go on in the prosecution. This caused such a disorder in her, who imagined she should be the unfortunate occasion of his being cast, that she was ready to swoon. Quarll's counsel, perceiving her disorder, imagined it might proceed from a regret of the mischief she had done; so put her in a way to invalidate her deposition.—'Now, Madam,' said the counsel, 'I 'very much question whether you can 'make your assertion good: pray pro-'duce your certificate; you can do us 'no hurt else.' Sally, overjoyed to hear that, said—'She had none;' chusing to undergo the greatest disgrace, rather than he should come to the least hurt. 'I 'thought as much,' said the counsel. 'Well, well,' replied the surly judge, 'she may have lost it: where was you 'married, child?'—'At Chatham, my 'lord, I think,' answered she, very much discountenanced. 'At Chatham, 'did you say?' replied the counsel: 'I 'doubt yours has been a sailor's wed-'ding, over a pot of drink; a man's 'wife till the next voyage, and any 'body's when he is gone. Your lord-'ships see how the case stands.'—'Yes, 'yes,' answered a judge; 'if she is his 'first wife that way, I dare say, he is 'not her first husband, by many.' So she was hissed out of the court. Then the judge addressing to the next pretender—'I hope,' says he, 'yours will not 'prove a sailor's wedding, as her's did.' —'A sailor's! No, my lord,' replied the second wife; 'I have witnesses 'enough to mine: my lady Firebrass, 'with whom I lived, and her two 'daughters, saw me fairly married in 'St. Martin's church.'—'How came 'it,' said the judge, 'you did not sue 'him before he married the third wife? 'You should have prevented his cheat-'ing any other poor woman.'—'Why, 'my lord,' said she, 'I knew nothing 'of it; he kept me a prisoner in the 'country, at this good woman's house, 'where he decoyed me, under pretence 'of being careful of me: I must go 'into the country, for a month or two, 'to take the air! but when he had me 'there, there he kept me ever since, 'charging the people of the house not 'to suffer me to come up to London, 'nor yet to go out; pretending I was 'mad, because I complained I was not 'well.'—'A very pretty device!' replied the old judge. 'Yes, my lord,' cried out all the women in the court, (who were come in great numbers to hear a trial about a rape, committed by a Quaker upon a maid of fifty years of age) 'and a very bad precedent, if not 'severely punished: should this be suf-'fered, a poor wife will not dare to be 'out of order, or complain, in hopes to 'be made much of, for fear her husband, 'under colour of giving her the pleasure 'of the country air, shall, when he has 'got her there, confine her, and so marry 'whom he pleases at London.'

The judges, to quell their clamour, were obliged to call to them, and promise them it should be no precedent; and that they might be sick at will, and groan at their pleasure, and also accept of their husbands kindnesses when offered.

The court being silenced, the proceedings went on, and several of the judges having been spoken to by some of Quarll's particular friends, who were related to some of them, they were more favourable in their judgment, all but the old surly judge, with whom no interest had been made.

The three wives then present having proved their marriage, the prisoner at the bar was asked what he had to say in his own defence.

Quarll, who thought his wife in the country was some time coming against him, not having given his council instructions concerning her, was obliged to plead himself. 'My lords,' said he, 'the 'first deponent against me being ran 'mad, and thereby unfit for human so-'ciety, I was obliged to think of some 'retirement for her, as it is necessary for 'people in her case.'—'Unfit for human 'society!' replied the second wife, in a great fury; and was going on in the same temper, but was bid to be silent, and he to proceed. 'So, my lords,' said he, 'I proposed the country, as the most 'pleasant and wholesome place, as also 'that which suited her indisposition best, 'being always ambitious to imitate the 'quality, who commonly go into the 'country,

'country in the ſummer; which made 'her accept the offer: there, my lords, 'I boarded her with very honeſt and ſuf-'ficient people, in a handſome, creditable 'and pleaſant houſe.'—'A pleaſant 'houſe!' replied ſhe; 'a perfect hovel.' —'There, my lords, I provided her every 'thing ſhe could want or deſire, as her 'landlady, here preſent, can juſtify.' His council, who, by what he had ſaid, had taken ſufficient hints to proceed, took the plea out of his hand, and went on. 'An't pleaſe your lordſhip,' ſaid he, 'ſince by her madneſs'—'My mad-'neſs!' ſaid ſhe, interrupting the coun-cil; 'I deſire, my lords, this good wo-'man (with whom I have lived many 'years) may be ſworn, whether ſhe, in 'all that time, did ſee or diſcern the leaſt 'ſymptoms of madneſs in me.'—'In-'deed,' replied the old woman, 'I have 'often ſeen you in the vapours; but I can-'not ſay I ever ſaw you, what they ſay, 'raving mad, but once.'—'My lord,' ſaid the priſoner, 'I beg this letter, which 'ſhe ſent me a week after ſhe was there, 'may be read; and then your lordſhips 'may judge whether I do her wrong.'

Orders being given from the bench, the letter was read. The old woman hearing her houſe ſo deſpiſed, *where a well-bred dog would run mad, if kept in*; and then her huſband and herſelf compar-ed to *oxen* and *cows*, was not a little diſ-pleaſed. 'My houſe, Madam,' ſaid the old woman, 'is not ſo *deſpicable* neither, 'as that comes to: I'm ſure, there's 'hardly a better, or more convenient, 'within ten miles round it. As for the 'room you lay in, no gentlewoman, in 'her right ſenſes, but would be contented 'with, eſpecially in the country; I muſt 'be obliged to ſide with your huſband 'there: and for my huſband and me to 'be reckoned no better than brutes, you 'have little reaſon to ſay ſo; for no wo-'man can be uſed with more humanity 'than you have been: and as for your 'being confined, you never were ſhut 'up any where, but always had the li-'berty of walking about our ground; 'only indeed, I would not conſent you 'ſhould trudge to London, as you often 'did offer to do.' The old woman, hav-ing done ſpeaking, Quarll's council put it to the bench, whether the proſecutrix ought to be accounted in her right ſenſes. The judges having given their opinion, that ſhe was frantick; the old judge be-ing diſpleaſed at their anſwer, aſked them, whether a man or woman's being frantick (which but few in this town are more or leſs) does impower either to marry again; and if they will allow that, why did he marry a third? 'The ſecond is not mad.'—'The ſecond,' replied the council, 'eloped, my lord, and was from 'her huſband half a year; and 'tis to be 'queſtioned, whether ſhe would ever 'have come near him, had ſhe not acci-'dentally found this opportunity to 'trouble him.'—'Tis a plain caſe, my 'lord,' ſaid another judge, 'the priſoner 'is guilty of the crime he ſtands indicted 'for: yet I don't ſee but that there is 'room for favour. His conſtitution per-'haps may require a woman for the 'maintenance of his health, and his in-'clination is averſe againſt vile women: 'beſides, my lord, we don't hear that he 'did cohabit or correſpond with more 'than one at a time; and never ſought 'a ſupply till he was deſtitute. In my 'opinion, my lord, he may be favoured 'a little.' The ill-natured judge told them very ſurlily, that the fact was plain, and that he was tried according to the laws of his country; and muſt expect to ſuffer the penalty of thoſe laws: but he could ſee no room for favour, unleſs his Majeſty (Charles the Second) would graciouſly be pleaſed to ſhew it him; and it was entirely out of his own power: ſo ſums up the evidences, and refers it to the jury.

The jury went out accordingly; and, after having ſtaid ſome time, brought in their verdict—'Death.' Sally, who was juſt by, no ſooner heard the terrible news, but fainted away, and was obliged to be carried out of court. The three wives likewiſe went away, upbraiding and re-proaching one another with being the fatal cauſe of loſing their huſband, wiſh-ing one another never to be relieved by man; and ſo parted. But Sally, as ſoon as recovered, went back to the priſoner again, and ſtaid with him till the court broke up, and then was allowed a coach to carry him to Newgate, and attended him there all that night.

As ſoon as the keepers came in the morning, he calls for pen, ink, and pa-per, which were brought him; and wrote the following letter to his colonel:

'MAY IT PLEASE YOUR HONOUR,

'I Am now under the terrible ſentence 'of condemnation; I need not tell 'you upon what account, my caſe being

'too

'too well known to the world already: 'but as you have beſtowed ſo many par-'ticular favours upon me hitherto, this 'emboldens me once more, in this my 'extreme neceſſity, to rely upon your 'goodneſs. It is true, my merit cannot 'lay claim to the leaſt mark of your 'eſteem; but it is your generoſity 'prompts me to beg my life at your 'hands, which, if you preſerve, ſhall al-'ways be devoted to your ſervice, by 'your unfortunate humble ſervant,

'PHILIP QUARLL.'

As ſoon as he had finiſhed, he delivers it to his dear-beloved Sally, and deſires her to carry the ſame to his colonel: Sally, joyful to ſerve him, takes the letter, and away ſhe flies. Being come to the houſe, ſhe delivers the letter to the colonel; who, having opened and read it, told her, That ſhe might aſſure him, he would do all that lay in his power to ſerve him: ſo Sally, expreſſing her gratitude, retired to carry the news to her huſband. When ſhe came to the priſon ſhe found him reading very ſeriouſly, leaning upon his hand, with tears in his eyes: ſhe ſtood ſome time to look at him; but finding he never ſtirred his head, nor moved his eyes, ſhe went ſoftly up to him, and ſpoke to him: he no ſooner heard her voice, but he ſtarts, and looks like one juſt awake from a dream; and then burſt into tears, and could not ſpeak a word; which Sally ſeeing, could not forbear weeping; and fell upon his neck, deſiring him with all tenderneſs to ſtop the torrent; for ſhe had ſome joyful news to tell him. 'What joyful news,' ſays he, 'can you bring a man under my 'wretched circumſtances? Can any thing 'elevate the mind whom Heaven itſelf 'has contrived to depreſs? Am not I 'the very out-caſt and ſcorn of Provi-'dence? Have not I been unfortunate 'from my infancy? And why will you 'ſtill add to my miſery? 'Tis you that 'now make me wretched: had you not 'ſo compaſſionately aſſiſted me in this 'my diſmal calamity with ſo much ten-'derneſs, I then willingly ſhould have 'left this hateful world, without think-'ing of you: but why muſt I make you 'the wretched partner of my misfor-'tunes? 'Tis that adds to my uneaſi-'neſs. O that I had not ſeen you in 'theſe my laſt moments!' Sally, interrupting him, ſaid—'Come, talk not of 'laſt moments; you may yet enjoy ma-'ny happy years; your colonel has pro-'miſed to uſe his utmoſt endeavours to 'preſerve your life.'—'I don't flatter 'myſelf with any thing of that kind,' ſays he, 'but if ſuch a thing ſhould hap-'pen, I am fully reſolved not to tarry 'long in England, which has brought 'upon me ſo many dire miſhaps.'

The colonel was as good as his word; for he loved Quarll extremely well: and therefore, as ſoon as Sally was gone, he orders his coach to be got ready, and away he poſts to my Lord Danby, who had a great influence at court at that time, and who was his particular friend. When he came thither, his lordſhip was not ſtirring; ſo he waited till he got up; who, as ſoon as come down, cries out —'So, colonel, what brings you here ſo 'ſoon? Did you come to breakfaſt with 'me?' The colonel ſeeing him ſo facetious and pleaſant, told him his meſſage. My lord, as ſoon as he heard it, anſwered, That upon his honour, he certainly would grant his requeſt; and made him ſtay to breakfaſt with him.

As ſoon as breakfaſt was over, he took leave of his lordſhip, and away he comes to bring the tidings to Quarll, whom he found alone, Sally having juſt left him. The colonel told him, he was ſorry to ſee him there, with other compliments uſual in ſuch caſes; and related to him the ſucceſs he had with my Lord Danby: ſo deſired him to be of good chear. Quarll fell at his feet, and expreſſed his gratitude in the moſt thankful terms imaginable; telling him, his life ſhould always be at his ſervice. His colonel, raiſing him up, told him he was very well ſatisfied; and, after a little more converſation, left him.

Sally, in the mean time, was not idle; for ſhe went and bought a rich piece of plate, and preſented it to the recorder, that he might favour Quarll in his report to his Majeſty; which had the deſired effect: for, when the dead warrant came down, he was excluded: and in a few days after, my Lord Danby procured his Majeſty's moſt gracious pardon; which his colonel brought him with great joy.

Quarll being diſcharged out of Newgate, reſolved not to tarry long in England; and told his beloved Sally, that he muſt now leave her, for he had made a vow not to tarry in Britain. She endeavoured to diſſuade him from his intentions; but, finding it to no purpoſe, deſired

Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. May 17 1786.

fired ſhe might accompany him. He aſked her, why ſhe deſired to be wretched, telling her, he was doomed to perpetual miſery: but ſhe was reſolutely bent to follow him wherever he went; and accordingly ſold what the knight had ſettled upon her, in order to carry the money with her.

Quarll hearing of a ſhip bound for the South Seas, which in her return was to touch at Barbadoes, the captain of her having been firſt mate of the ſhip to which Quarll had formerly belonged; this encouraged him to venture the voyage. Accordingly, he went to the commander, in order to agree with him about it. The captain, after ſome talk, began to call to mind their former acquaintance, but wondered to ſee him ſo much altered as to his condition, Quarll being very handſomely dreſſed, and his behaviour much better poliſhed than formerly: ſo deſired him to give him an account how this ſtrange alteration had happened, and by what means he came to this good fortune. 'Good fortune! do you 'call it?' ſays Quarll; 'I ſuppoſe then 'you look upon men by their outward 'appearance: but, did you know the 'world as well as I do, you would judge 'the contrary. Now,' adds he, 'I'll 'give you a ſhort account of my paſt 'life; and then I'll leave you to ſay whether I am not rather the perfect ſcorn 'and mock of fortune:' ſo related to him his paſt misfortunes; which Quarll told him in ſo moving a manner, that it almoſt drew tears from the captain's eyes. As ſoon as he had made an end—'Well,' ſays the captain, 'I thought 'that my way of living brought upon 'me more troubles than landmen are 'ſubject to; for, ſince I ſaw you, I have 'been ſhipwrecked twice; once upon 'the coaſt of Guinea, where I loſt the 'ſhip and cargo, and but five men ſaved; the other time, homeward bound 'from the Eaſt-Indies, a violent ſtorm 'aroſe, and drove us upon the coaſts of 'France, where with great difficulty 'we caſt anchor, in order to refit our 'ſhip, which was very much damaged 'in the late ſtorm. But about twelve 'o'clock the ſame night we came thither, a moſt violent hurricane blew 'in upon us, broke our cables and drove 'us aſhore; where again I loſt the ſhip 'and cargo, but all the men ſaved. 'Thus I think I have been unfortunate; 'but ſince they are paſt never think of 'them: we ſhall have a pleaſant voy'age; and as you ſay you have a mind 'to reſide at Barbadoes, where I muſt 'touch in my return, I'd have you lay 'out your money in the woollen manu'facture, and cutlery-ware, which are 'very good commodities in thoſe parts.' Quarll thanked him for his advice, and parted with him.

Away then he goes to Sally, and told her what he had been doing, and whither he intended to go. Sally anſwered, what was his pleaſure ſhould be hers; and that ſhe would be a partner in his fortunes and misfortunes, go whither he would. So Quarll went and bought the goods which the captain adviſed him to, and ſent them on board; and ſoon after followed with himſelf and wife.

They had not been long at ſea, before his darling Sally fell ſick and died, to his inexpreſſible grief; wiſhing ten thouſand times he had died with her. He began to be extreme melancholy, took no reſt, and would eat no victuals. The captain was afraid that he would die alſo; and did all he could to divert him; but was a long time before he could bring him to his former temper.

They ſailed on with a ſide-wind for the ſpace of a month; though, it changing full in their teeth, and very high withal, obliged them to caſt anchor, in order to lie by till the wind did ſerve; but ſeeing themſelves made upon by a pirate, they were obliged to weigh their anchor, and make the beſt of their way before the wind, in order to avoid being taken by thoſe infidels, who purſued them from four of the clock on Friday morning, till ten at night the following Sunday; at which time there aroſe a ſtorm; the ſky looked very black, the wind being at north-weſt, and clouds began to riſe and move towards them, having hung all the morning in the horizon: ſo that they took in their top-ſails, and furled their main-ſail; the ſea ran very ſhort, and broke in upon their deck: however, they put right before the wind, and ſailed ſo for three weeks, when they made Cape Horn: they had no ſooner got round the Cape, but the wind veered to the ſouth, and it fell flat calm; which continued for two days, when the wind ſprung up at ſouth-weſt, and they ſcudded before the wind very ſwift, and made an iſland whoſe name none of them

knew, the ſhip having never been the coaſt before; but there they found wood, water, and herbs of ſeveral ſorts, ſome ſeals and ſea-fowls. Here they refreſhed themſelves for four days, and then weighed anchor, the wind being fair at full ſouth, and traded at ſeveral ports on the coaſt of Peru, Chili, and Mexico. From Port Aquapulco they ſailed, having a freſh breeze at N. N. E. They had not ſailed above one day, before the wind veered to the ſouth-weſt, and blew a violent gale; and there being a great ſea, ſo that their ſhip took in a great deal of water, the wind continuing two days increaſing to a very great ſtorm, which held for one day and two nights more; during which time they perceived themſelves near ſome rocks. The ſtorm rather increaſing, and it growing dark, they deſpaired of ſaving the ſhip; and as the main-yard could not lower, the ſhip's tackling being diſordered by the violence of the ſtorm; Quarll being bold and active, took a hatchet which tumbled about the deck, and ran up the ſhrowds, in order to cut down what ſtopt the working of the main-yard; but, by that time he was got up, there came a ſea, which daſhed the ſhip to ſhatters againſt the rock, and with the violence of the ſhock flung Quarll, who was aſtride upon the main-yard, on the top of the rock; where, having the good fortune to fall in a cliff, he was hindered from being waſhed back again into the ſea, and drowned, as every body was that belonged to the ſhip.

Quarll, in a diſmal condition, remained the ſucceeding night in the cliff, being continually beaten with the daſhing back of the ſea; and being both bruiſed and numbed, pulled off his cloaths, which were dropping wet, and ſpread them in the ſun; and being over-fatigued, laid himſelf down on the ſmootheſt place of the rock he could find, being quite ſpent with the hardſhips he had undergone, and ſlept while his cloaths were drying.

His ſleep, though very profound, was not refreſhing: the danger he had been lately in, ſo ran in his mind, that grim Death was ever before his eyes, which conſtantly diſturbed his reſt; but Nature, who wanted repoſe, would be ſupplied, though it be broken. Having ſlept a few hours, he awakes almoſt as much fatigued as before, and faint for want of nouriſhment, having taken none for thirty-ſix hours before: ſo having looked upon his cloaths, which he perceived were not quite dry, he turned the other ſide to the ſun, and laid himſelf down to ſleep again; but ſtill nothing but horror entered his mind; his ſoul was continually harraſſed with the diſmal apprehenſions the effects of the late ſtorm had impreſſed upon him. He dreamt he was in a terrible tempeſt, and the ſhip he was in daſhed backwards and forwards through the waves with prodigious violence, the clouds pouring down vaſt ſtreams of liquid fire, and the raging ocean all in flames. In this diſmal condition he knew not what to do; but ſpying ſome land, as he thought, at a little diſtance from the ſhip, he was endeavouring to get thither; but not daring to truſt the ſea, which he imagined was like a caldron of oil in a blaze, reſolved to try whether he could not jump aſhore; but juſt as he was going to leap, he ſaw a horrid frightful monſter, with glaring eyes, and open mouth, ruſh from the boiling flames, and make at him to devour him; which ſcared him out of his ſleep.

When he awoke, he was very much terrified with his dream, and ſtared about him in a frighted manner, expecting every minute ſome creature to devour him: but, taking a little courage, put on his cloaths, which by this time were quite dry. He then looks about him; but alas! could ſee nothing but the dreadful effects of the late tempeſt, dead corpſes, broken planks, and battered cheſts floating, and ſuch aſpects which at once filled him with terror and grief.

Turning from thoſe ſhocking objects, which preſented to his eyes the dreadful death he ſo lately had eſcaped, he ſees at the other ſide the proſpect of one more terrible, hunger and thirſt, attended with all the miſeries that can make life burdenſome. Being ſeized with the terror of the threatening evil, he turns again towards the ſea, and looking on the dead corpſes, which the ſea now and then drove to the rock, and back again—'Oh, that I was like one of you!' ſaid he, 'paſt all dangers! I have ſhared with 'you in the terrors of death: why did I 'not alſo partake with you in it's re'lief? But why ſhould I complain, and 'have ſo much reaſon to be thankful? 'Had I been cut off, when the cares of

'ſaving

'ſaving this worthleſs carcaſe inter-
'cepted me from ſeeking the ſalvation
'of my ſoul, I ſhould not have had the
'preſent opportunity of taking care of
'it.' So, having returned thanks for his late deliverance, he reſigns himſelf to Providence, on whom he fully relies; climbs up the rock, and being come to the top, ſees land at the inſide, bearing both trees and graſs. 'Heaven be praiſed!' ſaid he, 'I ſhall not periſh upon theſe
'barren rocks.' So made a ſhift to go down to it, the weather then being calm.

END OF THE SECOND BOOK.

THE

ENGLISH HERMIT.

BOOK III.

AN ACCOUNT OF QUARLL'S WONDERFUL SHIFTS, AND SURPRIZING MANNER OF LIVING; OF THE MIRACULOUS ACTS OF PROVIDENCE; AND OF THE STRANGE EVENTS WHICH HAPPENED IN THE ISLAND SINCE HIS BEING THERE.

BEING come to the other side of the rock, he finds at the bottom of it a narrow lake, which separated it from the land: therefore pulling off his cloaths, the water being but shallow, he wades over with them in his arms; and dressing himself, walks up a considerable way in the island, without seeing any human creature, or perceiving any sign of it's being inhabited, which struck a great damp to his spirits. He walks it over and over, cross-ways and long-ways; yet could see nothing but monkeys, strange beasts, birds, and fowls, such as he had never seen before.

Having ranged himself weary, he sat down under a cluster of trees, that made an agreeable arbour: the place being pleasant and cool, made, as it were, for repose; and he being still very much fatigued, prompted him to lie down and sleep; during which, his mind is continually alarmed with the frightful aspect of grim Death. Sometimes he fancies himself striving with the rolling waves, stretching out his arms to catch hold of a plank tossing by; which, just come at, is beaten back by the roaring billows, whose terrible noise pronounces his death; at other times he thinks himself astride upon a piece of mast, labouring to keep himself on, and of a sudden washed away, and sunk down by a bulky wave; on every side of him men calling for help; others spent and past speaking; here some floating that are already perished, and there others expiring: thus in every object seeing his approaching fate.

Being awaked out of that irksome and uneasy sleep, he falls into as anxious and melancholy thoughts. 'I have,' said he, 'escaped being drowned, but how 'shall I avoid starving? Here's no food 'for man. But why should I despair? 'Did not Nebuchadnezzar live upon 'grass for several years, till restored to 'his nation? Cannot I do the same for 'a few days? by which time, Provi'dence, who has hitherto protected me, 'may raise me some means to get from 'hence.' So, being entirely resigned, he walks about to see the island, which he found surrounded with rocks, at the bottom of which there was a small lake, which was fordable in most places, so that he could with ease wade over to the rock; which he did at every side of the island, to see if he could perceive any ship, whereby he might get away: but, seeing none, and it drawing towards night, he returns, and employs the remainder of the day in looking for the most convenient place for him to pass away the approaching night; and having fixed upon one of the highest trees, he gets up as far as he well could, fearing some wild beast might devour him if he slept below; where, having returned thanks to Heaven for his late great deliverance, he commits himself to it's care; then settles, and falls to sleep, and slept till hunger

hunger waked him in the morning, having dreamt over-night of abundance of victuals, which he would fain have come at, but was kept off by a crofs cook, who bid him go and fifh for fome: to which he anfwered, that he was fhipwrecked, and had nothing to fifh withal. 'Well then,' faid the cook to him again, 'go where thou waft like to lofe thy life, 'and there thou fhalt find wherewithal 'to fupport it.'

Being awaked, he makes reflections upon his dream, which though he imagined might proceed from the emptinefs of his ftomach, it being cuftomary for people to dream of victuals when they go to bed hungry, yet at that time it may prove ominous. So driven by neceffity, and led by curiofity, he went to the fame fide of the rock he had been caft upon; where having ftood feveral hours without feeing fhipping, or aught that might anfwer his dream; the air coming from the fea being pretty fharp, and he faint, having taken no manner of food for near three days, he gave over all hopes of relief. Thus fubmitting himfelf to the will of Heaven, which he fuppofed decreed a lingering death to punifh him for his paft fins, he refolves to return where he lay the night before, and there wait for his doom; but being ftopped by a fudden noife which iffued from a creek in the rock, not far from where he ftood, he had the curiofity to go and fee what occafioned it.

Being come to the place he heard the noife proceed from, he fees a fine large cod-fifh near fix feet long, dabbling in a hole in the rock, where the late ftorm had caft it.

One under condemnation of death, and juft arrived at the place of execution, could not be more rejoiced at the coming of a reprieve, than he was at the fight of this fifh, having felt feveral fick qualms, fforerunners of the death he thought he was doomed to. 'Heaven 'be praifed!' faid he; 'here's my dream 'right: where Providence refcued my 'life from the grim jaws of Death, 'there it has provided me wherewithal 'to fupport it.'

So having taken off both his garters, he gets into the hole where the fifh lay; and having run them through it's gills, he hales it out, and drags it after him, being heavy, and he very weak. Going along, he finds feveral oyfters, muffels, and cockles in his way, which the fea had caft up and down the rock; and having a knife about him, he fat down and eat a few; fo refrefhed himfelf, his fpirits being exhaufted for want of food. This fmall nutriment very much recruited his decayed ftrength; and the thoughts of his fupply of provifion having difperfed the dull ideas his late want had bred in his mind, he chearfully takes his fifh, which he drags with much more vigour than before; and filling his pockets with falt that was congealed by the fun, which he found in the concavities of the rock, away he goes to the place where he lay the night before, in order to drefs fome of the cod-fifh; where being come, he picks up a parcel of dry leaves, and with his knife and a flint, ftruck fire, and kindled them: then, getting together a few ficks, made a fire preſently, and broiled a flice of his fifh; of which he eat fo heartily, that it overcame his ftomach, being grown weak with faſting. Thus ſick and out of order, he applies to the helpleſs recourſe, which was lying down; and having much fatigued and harraſſed himſelf with hauling the heavy fifh up and down the rock, he fell aſleep till the next morning; during which time his reſt was very much diſturbed with the frightful dream of being attacked by a terrible monſter, ſuch as never was heard of, either for bigneſs or grimneſs; which purſued him, till having run himſelf out of breath, he was forced to lie expoſed to his fury; but was prevented being devoured by a grave old gentlewoman of a moſt graceful and majeſtic countenance, at whoſe ſudden appearance the monſter fled. Having recovered breath, and ſtrength to ſpeak, he returns the old lady thanks for his deliverance, and begs leave to wait on her home, that he might know whither to come and pay his conſtant duty to her for this her late great kindneſs. To which ſhe anſwered, that ſhe was fixed in no particular habitation, but dwelt at every poor man's houſe; her occupation being to aſſiſt the helpleſs, but not the ſlothful and negligent: that he ſhould ſee her again before it was long. Mean time, ſhe bid him not go on in evil ways, but whenever overtaken, not to deſpair; for ſhe was always at hand: nevertheleſs, ſhe would not have him too depending. And ſo went away, leaving him very eaſy and pleaſed in his mind, that he had eſcaped ſuch vaſt danger.

Having ſlept quietly the remainder of the

the night, he awoke in the morning pretty freſh and hearty, but very much diſturbed at his late dream, which he feared preſaged and prognoſticated ſome approaching evil; but as he could make no comparative alluſion of the old lady, who reſcued him from the monſter, he concludes it muſt be an inſpiration of Providence, (whom the grave old lady did perſonate in the dream) who lately had preſerved him from a death by all appearance unavoidable, to keep him from deſpair in this his great extremity, promiſing to be at hand upon occaſion; yet would not have him neglect means to get away from a place where want threatens him. For though he might for a while ſubſiſt upon fiſh, wherewith he may be ſupplied, being ſurrounded by the ſea; yet he could not imagine which way he could be furniſhed with cloaths and bed againſt the winter; for want of which he muſt miſerably periſh with cold, unleſs ſupplied by ſome ſuch diſmal accident as expoſed him to the want thereof, which he heartily wiſhes and prays may never happen.

Having made theſe conſiderations, he, on his knees, returns kind Providence his hearty thanks for all the mercies that had been extended to him; begging the continuance of it's aſſiſtance. Then, as he took directions from his dream, watching the opportunity to get away from that melancholy place, he goes to the other ſide of the rock, to try if he could perceive any ſhipping in ſight.

The wind, being pretty high, fed his hopes, that each ſucceeding hour would gratify his wiſhing look, with that object the preceding could not bring forth; but was diſappointed. The night approaching, kept back all probability for that time: however, depending on better ſucceſs the next day, he returns whence he came; and being hungry, makes a fire, and broils another ſlice of the fiſh, then lays the reſt upon broad green leaves, and ſtrews ſalt thereon to keep it from ſpoiling, then goes to reſt; and as he lay undiſturbed the night before under the trees, and much more eaſy than atop, he ventured again, committing himſelf to the care of Providence.

But his thoughts, which all day had been diſturbed with the dread of thoſe hardſhips he muſt probably undergo, if obliged to continue there all winter, ſo ran in his mind, that they occaſioned ideas ſuitable to thoſe he had formed the day before; and cold being the greateſt of his fears, it is alſo the principal ſubject of his dream; which preſented to his imagination, that he was in a ſpacious place, paved with hail-ſtones of a prodigious bigneſs, and ſurrounded with high mountains of ice, which echoed with ſhivers. At the farther end thereof he ſaw an old man reſembling Time, as he is commonly painted, with heaps of ſnow and hail about him, and himſelf very buſy with making more: at his ſide ſtood a very beautiful woman, whoſe ſhape and make was uncommon, and her features and complexion extraordinary; but what ſurprized him moſt, was her having three pair of breaſts, wonderfully handſome, and curiouſly placed, which ſeemed to adorn her boſom far more than the richeſt ſtomacher made of diamonds or pearls could do; ſo that what in other women would look monſtrous, was in her an addition to her matchleſs beauty.

The ſight of that moſt perfect and complete woman warmed his blood, which the coldneſs of the place had chilled, and tempted him to come nearer the charmer. As he advanced, every ſtep he made ſeemed to add ſtrength to his limbs, and vigour to his life; which made him deſirous to come nearer to the perſon from whom he received ſuch beneficial effluvia; but was ſuddenly ſtopped by the old man's turning towards him with a grin and ſurly countenance; which threatened his nearer approach with evil.

Not daring to come nearer, he ſtands ſtill, wondering what buſineſs that moſt charming creature could have with that ſurly moroſe old fellow; when liſtening a while, he perceived ſhe was aſking boons of him in the behalf of a vaſt number of all ſorts of creatures that attended her at ſome diſtance behind, which he refuſed in a moſt churliſh manner; and as ſhe ſtill perſiſted in her ſuit, following him up and down, the *ill-natured* old man ſlily ſteps to the froſty mountain, and pulls down a large clod of ice, which ſtopped a gap therein, from whence came out a creature, made and featured like a man, but of a monſtrous ſize, and frightful aſpect; his exceſſive broad cheeks hanging down on each ſide of his long-piked chin, like two empty bladders; and his prepoſterous belly hung down, looking juſt like a ſail without wind. That monſter was no ſooner out, but he had

had orders from the ſpiteful old man to drive away the woman, and all her attendants; which word of command was no ſooner given, but it was put in execution. Having filled his ſhrivelled jaws with wind, which then ſtood out like ſo many kettle-drums, he falls a blowing upon one of the hills of ſnow, and turns it into a thick ſhower, which he drove with violence againſt that angel-like creature, and her clients, who immediately fled for ſhelter.

This barbarous treatment to the moſt deſerving of creatures, put him in amaze; to whom the angry old man (ſeeing he did not go with the reſt) came in a fury, ſaying—'Doſt thou put me to defiance? 'I'll bury thee in that which I only 'ſtrewed over them,' and went to lay hold of him; which cauſed him to awake in a wonderful fright.

Being riſen, he made reflections upon the late dreams. 'All my dreams,' ſaid he, 'have ever proved ominous; 'and, if I miſtake not, this muſt have 'ſome ſignification. Certainly this old 'man is Time, laying up a ſtore of froſt 'and ſnow againſt next winter; and that 'goodly woman is Nature, who being 'tender over all her creatures, interceded 'for moderation: and his ſurly refuſal, 'and rough uſage, prognoſticate a for-'ward and hard winter, to whoſe ſeve-'rity I muſt lie expoſed, being altoge-'ther unprovided.'

Theſe reflections bred various melancholy thoughts, which almoſt led him to deſpair. 'Oh!' ſaid he, 'that I was 'but a mouſe, bat, or a yet meaner 'creature! Then ſhould I be below the 'cruel perſecutions of Fate. But man, 'who was created in the nobleſt form, 'endued with reaſon and underſtanding, 'animated with an immortal ſoul, muſt 'be aimed at as the only mark worthy 'it's malignant darts! But why do I 'thus rave at thoſe evils we are the au-'thors of? Had man continued in his 'original ſtate of innocence, the very 'name of Fate or Fortune would not 'have been known. Well, ſince this is 'the product of ſin, I accept this black 'lot as juſtly coming to my ſhare; and 'humbly ſubmitting to Heaven's de-'cree, I thankfully take this dream as 'a timely warning; and, in imitation 'of thoſe creatures repreſented in it, I'll 'provide what ſhelter I can againſt bad 'weather comes.'

Accordingly, firſt he begins to think of making himſelf an houſe to preſerve him from the injuries of the weather; but having nothing to make it of, nor any inſtrument but a knife, which could be of little ſervice to him, he reſolves to go to that part of the rocks where he was ſhipwrecked, to ſee if he could diſcover any thing among the wreck that might be ſerviceable to him; and therefore takes a branch of a tree along with him, and, coming to the place, he ſtrips himſelf, and goes into the water, (the water being low, diſcovering the tops of ſeveral ſharp-pointed rocks) and gropes along with his ſtaff for ſure footing, wading as high as his chin, diving to the bottom frequently, and feeling about with his hands. This he continued doing for almoſt two hours, but to no purpoſe, not daring to go out of his depth; for he well knew, that he could do little good there, becauſe he could diſcover no part of the ſhip, not ſo much as the maſt, or any of the rigging, but fancied ſhe lay in ſome deep hole, where it was impoſſible to get at her.

Thus deſpairing, and fretting, and teazing himſelf, he calls to mind, that he had a hatchet in his hand when he was caſt away, and thought probably it might lie in that clift of the rock, into which he was thrown; thither he went, and looking about, perceived ſomething like the handle of a hatchet juſt above the ſurface of the water at the bottom of the rock; and, going down to it, took it up; which, to his great joy, proved to be the very thing he wanted.

Having got his tool, he dreſſes himſelf, and goes on to the iſland again, intending to cut down ſome trees to make himſelf a hut. Looking about, therefore, for the propereſt plants, and taking notice of a ſort of trees, whoſe branches, bending to the ground, took root, and became a plant, he thought they might be the fitteſt for this purpoſe, and cut a ſufficient parcel of them to make his barrack; which was full buſineſs for him that day.

The next morning, having paid his uſual devotion, he walks out again to look a pleaſant and convenient place to make his hut or barrack upon. He walked ſeveral hours, and could find none more ſheltered from the cold winds, than that where he already lay, being in the middle of the iſland, well fenced on the north and eaſt ſides with trees, which ſtood very thick. The place being fixed upon, he hews down ſome trees that grew

in

in his way, and clears a spot of ground about twelve feet square, leaving one tree standing at each corner; and, with the young plants he provided the day before, filled the distance between quite round, setting them about six inches asunder, leaving a larger vacancy for the door. His inclosure being made, he bends the branches a-top from both sides, and weaves them cross one another, making a cover to it; which being something too thin, he laid other branches over, till they were grown thicker. Having finished the top, he goes about closing the sides; for which purpose, taking large branches, he strips off their small twigs, and weaves them between the plants as they do for sheep-pens; then made a door after the same manner.

His barrack being finished, which took him up fifteen days hard work; 'Now,' said he, 'here's a house, but where's 'the furniture? This, indeed, may 'keep the weather from me, but not 'the cold. The ground on which I do 'and must lie, is hard, and doubtless, 'in the winter, will grow damp; which, 'with want of covering, may occasion 'agues and fevers, the cholick and rheu-'matism, and twenty racking distempers, 'which may excuse me to repent my hav-'ing escaped a milder death.'

In this great consternation and perplexity, he goes to see if he could spy any shipping riding within sight of the island. As he was walking along, full of heavy and dull thoughts, which weighed his looks to the ground, he happened to find a sort of high grass that grows but here-and-there, round some particular sort of trees, of which he never took notice before. 'Heaven be 'praised!' said he, 'I have found where-'withal to keep my poor body from 'the ground, whilst I am, by Provi-'dence, doomed to remain here.' So passes on, intending, at his return, to cut down a sufficient quantity of it to make mats that might serve him instead of bed and bed-cloaths.

Having looked himself almost blind, without seeing the least prospect of what he desired, he concludes upon going to cut the grass, which he stood in such want of, and spread it to dry, whilst the weather was yet warm. That piece of work kept him employed the remainder of the day; and best part of the succeeding, having nothing but a pocket-knife to cut withal. That work being done, wanting a tool to spread and turn his grass, he takes a branch off the next tree, which having stript of all the small ones about it, all but part of that at the top, being forky, made a tolerable fork. Thus being equipped for hay-making, he went on with his work; and as he was at it, he saw, at some distance, several monkeys as busy as himself, scratching something out of the ground, which they did eat upon the spot, and carried the rest to their home.

His hopes that those roots might be for his use, those creatures being naturally dainty, eating nothing but what men may, made him hasten to the place he saw them scratching at, that by the herb they bear (which they tore off) he might find out the root.

Having, by the leaves which he picked off the ground, found some of the same, he dug them up, and carried them to his barrack, where he broiled a slice of his fish, and in the ashes roasted them, which eat something like chesnuts done in the same manner.

This new-found-out eatable much rejoicing him, he returned his hearty thanks to kind Providence, that had put him in a way to provide himself with bread, and that of a most delicious kind. As soon therefore as he had dined, he went out on purpose to dig up a good quantity; but, as he was going to the place where he had taken notice they grew pretty thick, he sees a tortoise, of about a foot over, crawling before him. 'Hea-'ven be praised!' said he, 'here's what 'will supply me both with victuals, and 'utensils to dress it in.' He ran, therefore, and turned it on it's back, to keep it from getting away, whilst he went for his hatchet, that he might cut the bottom-shell from the top, in order to make a kettle of the deepest, and a dish of the flat part.

Being tired of cod-fish, he dresses the tortoise, an animal seldom eaten but upon extremity, the flesh thereof often giving the flux. Nevertheless he ventured upon it, and liked it extremely, some part of it eating very much like veal; which at that time was a very great novelty to him, having eaten no fresh meat for a long time before.

Happening to eat of that part of the tortoise which is the most feeding, and least hurtful, he was in no-wise discom-

posed;

paſs'd; but, having boiled it all, he laid by the remainder to eat now and then between his fiſh.

Being provided with a boiling utenſil, he often had change, by means of thoſe admirable roots ſo luckily diſcovered; ſome of which he roaſted for bread, others he boiled with ſalt cod. This in a great meaſure mitigated his misfortune, and ſoftened the hardſhip he lay under; ſo that, ſeeing but little proſpect of changing his preſent condition, by getting away from thence yet a-while, he thinks on means to make it as eaſy as poſſible whilſt he remained in it; for, having projected a bed, and taking the graſs, which by that time was dry, he falls to work; and a mat being the thing concluded upon, he twiſts his hay into ropes, the bigneſs of his leg; then he cuts a pretty number of ſticks, about two feet long, which he drives in the ground, ten in a row, and near four inches aſunder, and oppoſite to them ſuch another row at ſix or ſeven feet diſtance from the firſt, which made the length of his mat; then having faſtened one end of his rope to one of the corner ſticks, he brings it round the other corner ſtick, and ſo to the next at the other end, till he has laid his frame: then he weaves acroſs ſhorter ropes of the ſame, in the manner they make pallions on board with old cable-ends. When he had finiſhed his mat, he beat it with a long ſtick, which made it ſwell up; and the graſs being of a ſoft cottony nature, he had a warm and eaſy bed to lie on.

The comfort and pleaſure he found on his ſoft mat (being grown ſore with lying on the ground for the ſpace of a month and more) ſo liberally gratified him for the time and labour he had beſtowed in making it, that it gave him encouragement to go about another; a covering being the next neceſſary wanted; for though the weather was, as yet, pretty warm, and he, in a great meaſure, ſeaſoned by the hardſhips he had gone through; yet the winter approaching, and the preſent ſeaſon ſtill favourable for him to make proviſion againſt it, he goes and cuts more graſs; which being made ready for uſe, he lengthens his loom, to allow for rolling up at one end, inſtead of a bolſter, and makes it thicker than the firſt; which he intends, in cold weather, ſhall lie upon him inſtead of blankets.

Being provided with the moſt neceſſary furniture he wanted, he thinks on more conveniencies, reſolving to make himſelf a table to eat his victuals upon, and a chair to ſit on. Thus, having cut ſeveral ſticks about four feet long, he drives them in a row a little way in the ground; then takes ſmaller, which he interweaves between: having made the top, he ſets it upon four other ſticks, forky at the upper end, which he ſtuck in the ground at one ſide of his barrack, to the height of a table; this being done, he cuts four more branches, ſuch as he judged would do beſt for the ſeat and back of a chair, which he alſo drove in the ground near his table; and having twiſted the branches, which grew to them, with each other, from back to front, and acroſs again, he weaves ſmaller between, bottoming his ſeat; which completes the furniture of his habitation.

That care being over, another ſucceeds, of far greater moment—'Here's 'a dwelling,' ſaid he, 'to ſhelter me 'from the weather, and a bed to reſt 'this poor body of mine; but where is 'food to ſupport it? Here have I ſubſiſted near one month upon a fiſh, 'which the ſame dreadful ſtorm that took 'away forty lives, ſent me to maintain 'my own. Well, ſince kind Provi'dence has been pleaſed to preſerve my 'life, preferable to ſo many, who fatally 'periſhed in that diſmal accident, I am 'bound, in gratitude, to hold it precious; and ſince my fiſh is almoſt gone, 'and I am not certain of more, I muſt by 'degrees bring myſelf to live upon 'roots, which I hope will never be 'wanting, being the natural product of 'this iſland: ſo I muſt eat of the ſmall 'remnant of my fiſh, but now and 'then, to make it hold out longer. 'Dainties or plenty were not allotted 'for him that was doomed to ſlavery, 'but labour and hard-living; and, if 'I meet here the latter, Heaven be 'praiſed, I have eſcaped the worſe; I 'can take my reſt, and ſtand in no dread 'of any ſevere inſpector and taſk-maſter.'

Now being entirely reconciled to the ſtate of life Providence, on whom he fully depended, had been pleaſed to call him to, he reſolves to make proviſion of thoſe excellent roots; and with his hatchet he cuts a piece of a tree, wherewith he makes a ſhovel, in order to dig

them up with more eaſe. With this inſtrument he went to the place where he had obſerved they grew thickeſt, which being near the monkeys quarters, they came down from off their trees in great numbers, grinning as if they would have flown at him; which made him ſtop a while: he might indeed, with the inſtrument in his hand, have killed ſeveral, and perhaps diſperſed the reſt; but would not.—'Why,' ſaid he, 'ſhould I 'add barbarity to injuſtice? It is but 'natural and reaſonable for every crea-'ture to guard and defend their own: 'this was given them by Nature for 'food, which I come to rob them of; 'and ſince I am obliged to get of them 'for my ſubſiſtence, if I am decreed to 'be here another ſeaſon, I will ſet ſome 'in a place diſtant from theirs for my 'own uſe.'

Having ſtood ſtill a conſiderable time, thoſe animals, ſeeing he did not go forwards, each went and ſcratched up for itſelf, afterwards retiring; giving him the opportunity to dig up a few for himſelf: and as he was not come to the place where they grew thick, he laid them in ſmall heaps as he dug them up; while thoſe fly creatures would, whilſt he was digging up more, come down from the trees, where they ſtood hid among the leaves, and ſteal them away: which obliged him to be contented for that time with as many as his pockets would hold, reſolving to bring ſomething next time which would contain a larger quantity; and fearing thoſe animals, which are naturally very cunning, ſhould dig them up, and hide them, he comes early the morning following to make his proviſion: and for want of a ſack to put them in, he takes his jacket, which he buttons up, and ties at the ſleeves; and as he had obſerved, that every root had abundance of little offſets hanging at it by ſmall fibres, he pulled off his ſhirt alſo, of which he makes another ſack to put them in.

Being naked all but his breeches, and the day being pretty hot, he thought he had as good pull them off too, and fill them, his jacket being but ſhort, and therefore holding but few: taking, therefore, his bundle in one arm, and having the ſhovel in the other hand, he goes to the place he intended to do the day before; and expecting to find the ſame oppoſition as he did then, he brought with him ſome of the roots he had dug up the preceding day, in order to throw them amongſt thoſe animals, and ſo quiet them. But to his great wonder, and as great ſatisfaction, thoſe creatures which the time before had oppoſed him with noiſe, and offenſive motions, let him now paſs by quietly, without offering to meddle with any when dug up, though he had laid them up by heaps in their way, and ſtood at a conſiderable diſtance from them.

This ſurprizing reverence from thoſe creatures, ſet him upon deep reflections on what could be the cauſe thereof; whether it might not proceed from the proximity of their ſhape and his.—'But then,' ſaid he, 'my ſtature and 'colour of ſkin is ſo different from 'theirs, that they cannot but diſtinguiſh 'I am not of their kind. No, it muſt 'be a remnant of that awe, entailed by 'Nature upon all animals, to that moſt 'noble and complete maſter-piece of 'the creation called *Man*, which, now 'appearing in the ſtate he was firſt cre-'ated in, and undiſguiſed by cloaths, 'renew an image of that reſpect he has 'forfeited by his fatal tranſgreſſion, 'which ever ſince obliged him to hide 'the beauty of his fabric under a gaudy 'diſguiſe, which often renders him ri-'diculous to the reſt of mankind, and 'generally obnoxious to all other crea-'tures; making a pride of what he 'ought to be aſhamed of. Well,' adds he, 'ſince my cloaths bred the antipathy, I 'will remove that cauſe, which will 'ſuit both the nature of thoſe animals, 'and my own circumſtances.' From that time he reſolves to go naked, till the hardneſs of the weather obliged him to put ſomething on.

Having picked up a ſufficient quantity of off-ſets to ſtock about two acres of land, he returns home, leaving behind him a conſiderable number of roots dug up for thoſe poor animals, which attended him all the time he was at work, without offering to touch one till he was gone.

Being come home, he fixes upon a ſpot of ground near his habitation, and digs it up as well as he could with his wooden inſtrument, in order to ſow his ſeeds which having compaſſed in about twenty days, he implores a bleſſing upon his labour, and leaves it to time to bring it forth. Thus having finiſhed the

the moſt neceſſary work about his barrack, he reſolves to take a more particular view of the iſland, which till then he had not time to do; and taking a long ſtaff in his hand, he walks to the lake, which parts the land from the rock, and goes along the ſide of it quite round the iſland, finding all the way new ſubjects of admiration. On the left-hand ſtood a rampart made of one ſolid ſtone, adorned by Nature with various forms and ſhapes, beyond the power of art to imitate; ſome parts challenging a likeneſs to a city, and cluſters of houſes, with here and there a high ſteeple ſtanding above the other buildings; another place claiming a near reſemblance to a diſtant ſquadron of men of war in a line of battle: further, it bears compariſon with the dull remains of ſome ſumptuous edifice, ruined by the often repeated ſhocks of time, inciting the beholders to condolence for the loſs of it's former beauty. At ſome diſtance from thence the proſpect of a demoliſhed city is preſented to the ſight: in another place large ſtones like ſmall mountains, laid, as it were, a-top of one another, impreſs the mind with an idea of the tower of Babel; and on the right-hand a moſt pleaſant land covered with beautiful green graſs, like camomile, and here and there a cluſter of trees, compoſing moſt agreeable groves, amongſt a vaſt number of fine lofty trees of divers heights and ſhapes, which ſtood more diſtant, whoſe irregularity added much to the delightfulneſs of the place.

As he was walking on, admiring all theſe wonderful works of Nature, having caught cold, (not being uſed to go naked) he happened to ſneeze oppoſite to a place in the rock, which hollowed-in after the manner of the inſide of ſome cathedral, and was anſwered by a multitude of different voices iſſuing from that place. The agreeableneſs of the ſurprize induced him to rouſe thoſe echoes a ſecond time, by giving a loud hem; which was, like his ſneezing, repeated in different tones, but all very harmonious: again he hemmed, and was ſo delighted with the repetition, that he could have ſpent hours in the hearing of it. 'But why ſhould 'I,' ſaid he, 'waſte thoſe melodious 'ſounds, ſo fit to relate the Almighty's 'wonderful works, and ſet forth his 'praiſe?' Immediately he ſung ſeveral pſalms and hymns, with as much emulation and devotion, as if he had been in company with numbers of ſkilful and celebrated choriſters.

Having ſpent a conſiderable time there with much pleaſure, he proceeds in his walk, being reſolved to make that his place of worſhip for the future, and attend it twice a day conſtantly.

About three or four hundred paces farther, having turned on the other ſide of a jetting-out part of the rock, he was ſtopped a ſecond time by another ſurprizing product of Nature; a large ſtone, growing out of the rock, advancing quite over the lake at the bottom of it, repreſenting ſomething of a human ſhape, out of the breaſt whereof iſſued a fountain of exceeding clear water, as ſweet as milk; and, when looked at fronting, was like an antique piece of architecture, which in old times they built over particular ſprings; and on the other ſide appeared as if ſpringing from the noſtrils of a ſea-horſe. Theſe three ſo very different, and yet rightly compared likeneſſes, being offered by one and the ſame unaltered object, made him curious to examine what parts of every reſemblance helped to make out the others: and having ſpent a conſiderable time in the examination, he found every thing, which the front had likeneſs of, was employed in making the ſide repreſentation, by being in ſome places ſhortened, and others lengthened, according to the point of ſight.

Being ſatisfied about that ſubject, he enters upon another as puzzling. The baſon, in which the fountain ran, which was about five yards diſtant from whence the water did ſpring, being but about nine feet over every way, without any viſible place to evacuate it's overcomplement, and yet keeping the ſame height, without daſhing or running over, although the ſtream that fell into it ran as big as his wriſt. Having a long time ſearched into the cauſe, without any ſatisfaction, he conjectures it muſt make it's way out ſomewhere under ground; ſo went on, till he came to the place he had begun his march at, which ended that day's work.

Having been round the iſland, which to the beſt of his judgment was about ten or eleven miles in circumference, of an oblong form, going in and out in ſeveral places, extending from north to ſouth, the ſouth end near twice as broad as the oppoſite; he reſolves to employ the next day in viewing the inſide.

Then recommending himself to Providence, as he never failed to do, both morning and evening, he goes to bed; but not being sleepy, the over-active faculty in man roves from one subject to another. His mind runs from his present station to his former, re-assuming his past pleasures, which he never must hope to meet again, and calls in all the evils his present condition of life lays him exposed to. Those dull thoughts quite dislodge his late-born hopes of Heaven's assistance, and shake his future dependance on Providence: he snarls and quarrels with his fate, and repines at his condition; which not being in his power to mend, he wishes for eternal sleep, to free his mind of tumults and cares, which croud upon him.

Sleep was granted him, but not rest: his repining is chastised with terrifying dreams of the punishment he had been condemned to; all his past troubles come upon him in the most grievous and shocking manner they could appear; his raging wives at once fall upon him, exerting their utmost malice and revenge, which he cannot avoid, but by embracing either an ignominious death, or a severe and vile bondage. These terrible aspects put him in the same pains and agony, as if already feeling the assigned torment.

Having in his dream, with hard struglings, escaped death, he finds himself in an exceeding hot country, his half-naked body continually bending to the hard and dry ground, grabbling round a nauseous weed for fulsome worms; every now and then lashed by a cross and severe task-master, who hurries him to work. In this great perplexity he cries out, 'Oh, that I had ended my wo-'ful days at the shameful gibbet! Sure it 'would have been a milder fate!' At which he awaked in such a consternation, that it was several minutes before he could be thoroughly satisfied it was but a dream. Having recalled his dispersed senses, he made this reflection; that it really was the penalty he had been sentenced to, and by Providence preserved from. Setting then his present condition in opposition to that, he acknowledges his ingratitude, for which he secretly repents, and on his knees, with weeping eyes, asks pardon, imploring the continuation of Providence's protection; resolving, for the future, never to think or wish to change that state of life it had pleased Heaven to place him in; wholly dedicating the remains of his days to God's worship. Holding henceforth, as inestimable, the happiness of being freed from those cares, which daily slew on them who are concerned with the world, which might cool or slacken his duty to so great a Benefactor.

Having intirely resigned himself to the will of God, he casts off all cares, and banishes from his mind all that could create any; resolving to employ those hours that ran between the intervals of time he had dedicated to divine worship, in the contemplation of the many wonderful works of Nature, manifested in such various manners all over the island.

So he walks along the land, which he found very level, covered with a delightful green grass, and adorned with trees of divers sorts, shapes, and height, inhabited with several sorts of curious singing birds, of various colours and notes, which entertained him with their melodious harmony. In some places stood a cluster of trees, composing agreeable and delightful groves, proceeding from only one main body, whose lower branches, being come to a certain length, applied to the earth for immediate nourishment, as it were, to ease the old stem that produced them; and so became a plant, and did the same.

Having for some time admired the agreeableness and curiosity of the plant, by which Nature seemed to give human kind instructions; and looking about, if perchance he could find any thing in his way for his own proper use; he took along with him a sample of every different herb he thought might be eatable. Crossing the island in several places, he comes at a most delightful pond, about two hundred yards in length, and one hundred and fifty wide, with fine trees spreading their branchy limbs over it's brink, which was surrounded with a beautiful bank, covered with divers kinds of flowers and herbs, so naturally intermixed, which compleated it in ornament and conveniency, as though intended by Nature for more than mortal's use.

Having walked several times around it, with much pleasure, he sat down a while upon it's bank, to admire the clearness of the water, through which, to his great comfort, he saw many different sorts of fish, of various bigness, shapes, and colours. 'Heaven be praised!' said he,

'here

'here is a ſtock of freſh-water fiſh to 'ſupply me with food, if the ſea ſhould 'fail me.'

Being ſufficiently diverted with their chaſing one another, which were of many beautiful and different colours, and made a moſt delightful ſcene, he proceeds in his walk, and goes to the ſouth of the iſland, where he finds another ſubject of admiration; a noble and ſpacious wood, whoſe ſhades ſeemed to be made for the abode of peace and pleaſure. He walked round it with much delight, which made the time ſeem ſhort; yet he could gueſs it to be no leſs than two miles about.

Having viewed the outſide, whoſe extraordinary agreeableneſs incited in him an unſurmountable deſire to get into it, but where he was afraid to venture, leſt there might be deſtructive creatures; yet, having recommended himſelf to the care of Providence, he ventured into it, finding ſeveral pleaſant walks, ſome ſtraight, edged with lofty trees, as though planted for pleaſure; others crooked and winding, bordered with a thick hedge of pimentoes, which caſt a moſt fragrant ſmell: here and there a large cluſter of buſhes and dwarf-trees, wherein ſheltered ſeveral different kinds of wild beaſts and fowls. 'Sure,' ſaid he, 'this iſland ne-'ver was intended by Nature to lie waſte, 'but rather reſerved to be the happy 'abode of ſome, for whom Heaven had 'a particular bleſſing in ſtore. Here is 'every thing ſufficient, not only for the 'ſupport, but alſo for the pleaſure of life; 'Heaven make me thankful, that I am 'the happy inhabitant of ſo bleſſed a 'land!'

Being hungry, and tired with walking, he goes home, in order to get ſome victuals; and, having made a fire, he boils a ſlice of his ſalt-fiſh with ſome roots, and then the herbs he brought with him, which proved of divers taſtes, and all excellent; ſome eating like artichokes, others like aſparagus and ſpinage. 'Now,' ſaid he, 'what can I 'wiſh for more! Here I poſſeſs a plen-'tiful land, which produces both fowls, 'fleſh, and fiſh; bears excellent greens 'and roots, and affords the beſt of wa-'ter, which by Nature was ordained for 'man's drink. Pomp and greatneſs 'are but pageantry, which oftentimes 'prove more prejudicial to the actor, 'than diverting to the beholder. Eaſe 'and indulgence are apt to breed the 'gout, and various diſtempers, which 'make the rich more wretched than the 'poor; now theſe evils, thanks to my 'Maker, I ſtand in no danger of, hav-'ing but what is ſufficient, which never 'can do any harm.'

Thus thoroughly eaſy in his mind, he propoſes to ſpend the afternoon at the outſide of the rock, in viewing the ſea, and looking for oyſters; ſo takes in his hand his long ſtaff to grabble in holes; and his breeches, which he ties at the knees, to bring them in. Being come to a place of the rock he never had been at before, he ſees at a diſtance, ſomething like linen hanging upon it; which, when come at, he found to be the main-ſail of a ſhip, with a piece of the yard faſtened to it. 'Alas!' ſaid he, 'a 'diſmal token of inſatiable ambition! 'which makes men often loſe their lives 'in ſeeking what they ſeldom find; and, 'if they ever do, 'tis commonly attend-'ed with a world of care. Happy is he 'who limits his deſires to his ability; 'aſpiring not above his reach, and is 'contented with what nature requires.' Then he falls a ripping the ſheet from the yard, which he finds in one place tied with one of his garters! (having himſelf made uſe of it for want of another ſtring) 'Heaven be prais'd,' ſaid he, 'this is 'no effect of another ſhipwreck, but 'a fragment of the unfortunate ſhip, 'whoſe loſs was my redemption;' which reflection made him ſhed tears.

Having ripped the ſail in pieces, he rolls them up in ſuch bundles as he could conveniently carry, and lays them down till he had got a few oyſters, proceeding to grope in holes with his ſtick as he went on.

About forty paces farther, he finds a cheſt in a clift of the rock, which had been waſhed up there by the violence of the late ſtorm. 'Heaven!' ſaid he, 'more fatal effects of Fate's cruelty, and 'man's temerity! Was the ſea made 'for men to travel on? Is there not 'land enough for his rambling mind to 'rove? Muſt he hunt after dangers, 'and put Death to defiance? What 'is the owner of this the better for it 'now! Or who can be the better in a 'place ſo remote, and the acceſs to it ſo 'difficult? being not to be approached 'but on the wings of Providence and over 'the back of Death. Now, was this full 'of maſſy gold, or yet richer things, I 'thank my God, I am above the uſe of 'it;

'it; yet I'll take it home: it was sent 'hither by Providence, perhaps for the 'relief of some so necessitated and des- 'titute.' Then going to lift it, he could not; therefore was obliged to fetch his hatchet to beat it open, that he might take away what was in it by degrees. Having taken as much of the sail-cloth as he could conveniently carry, with the few oysters he had got, he went home, and fetched the tool, wherewith he wrenched the chest open, from which he took a suit of cloaths, and some wearing linen. 'These,' said he, 'neither the 'owner, nor I, want:' so laid them down. The next thing he took out, was a roll of several sheets of parchment, being blank indentures and leases. 'These,' said he, 'are instruments 'of the law, and often applied to injus- 'tice; but I'll alter their mischievous 'properties, and make them records of 'Heaven's mercies, and Providence's 'wonderful liberality to me; so, instead 'of being the ruin of some, they may 'chance to be the reclaiming of others.' At the bottom of the chest lay a rundlet of brandy, a Cheshire cheese, a leather bottle full of ink, with a parcel of pens, and a penknife. 'As for these,' said he, 'they are of use; the pens, ink, and 'parchments, have equipped me to keep 'a journal, which will divert and pass 'away a few anxious hours. As for the 'cheese and brandy, they will but cause 'me new cares: before I had them, I 'wanted them not; now, the benefit and 'comfort I shall find in them, when 'gone, will make me hanker after them 'most; I wish I had still been without 'them; but now they are here, it would 'be a sin to let them be lost. I'll take 'them home, and only use them at my 'need; which will both make them 'hold out the longer, and me grow less 'fond of them.'

So, by degrees, he takes home the chest, and what was in it; and now having materials to begin his journal, he immediately fell to work, that, for want of other books, he might at his leisure peruse his past transactions, and the many mercies he had received from Heaven; and that, after his decease, whoever is directed thither by Providence, upon reading his wonderful escapes in the greatest of dangers; his miraculous living, when remote from human assist- ance; in the like extremity, might not despair. Thus he begins from his being eight years old (as well as he can remember he heard an old aunt of his say) to the day of his being cast away, which happened on the 10th of July, 1675, being then twenty-eight years of age, resolving to continue it to his death.

Thus having written the preceding account of the shipwreck, and what had befallen him since, to the finding of the chest, which was on the 15th of September, 1675, he proceeds.—But calling to mind his last dream but one, which did warn him to make provision against winter, and the season being pretty far advanced, he gathers a good store of fuel and roots; begins to line the outside of his barrack with a wall of turf, and lays the same a-top, to keep out the wet: and as he now and then found small shell-fish and oysters upon the rock, he makes a bridge over the lake, which in warm weather he used to wade, that in the winter he might go over dry: so, having compleated his bridge, which was made of two strong poles, which reached from the land to the rock, and several lesser branches laid across pretty close, he retires home, the day being far spent. The following night, being the 18th of September, there arose a violent storm, attended with dreadful claps of thunder, which the many echoes from the rock rendered more terrible; and lightnings flashing in a most frightful manner, succeeding each other, before the preceding was well out of the sky, which put poor lonesome Quarll in such a consternation, that, notwithstanding his reliance on Heaven's protection, he would have given the world (had it been in his possession) to have been within the reach of human assistance; or at least, to have some company; solitude adding much to his terror and affliction.

The glorious rising of the next morning's sun having laid the mortifying rage of the blustering winds, Quarll, whose late alarm was hardly quelled, still suspected it's most reviving rays to be terrifying glances and flashes of lightning: but having lain a while, and hearing no noise, but that which still raged in his mind, was at last convinced the storm was over; and so gets up with a resolution to go and see if he could discern any effect of the late tempest.

Being come at the other side of the rock, he saw, indeed, surprizing objects, but not afflicting; the mischief that was done, being to the inhabitants of the sea only,

only, a vaſt number of which had, by the wind, been diſ-elemented; a quantity of ſtately whitings, fine mackarels, large herrings, divers ſizes of codlings, and ſeveral other ſorts of fiſh, with a great number of ſhells, of different ſhapes and bigneſſes, lying up and down upon the rock. 'Heaven be praiſed!' ſaid he, inſtead of damage to bewail, what thanks have I now to return for this mighty benefit! Here the powerful agent of miſchief is, by kind Providence, made a miniſter of good to me. Make me thankful! I am now provided for all the next winter; and yet longer; by which time I am certain to have a freſh ſupply.

* 'He who, when in diſtreſs,
'To God makes his addreſs,
'And his bounties implore;
'Is ſure, and may depend,
'That relief he will ſend,
'And at need help the poor.'

Thus having taken up as many fiſh as he could hold in his arms, he carries them home, and brings his ſhirt, which he uſed inſtead of a ſack. So, at ſeveral times, he brought away all the fiſh, and as many of the ſhells as he had occaſion for; of ſome of which he made boilers and ſtew-pans, of others diſhes and plates: ſome he kept water in, and others fiſh in pickle; ſo that he was ſtocked with neceſſary veſſels, as well as proviſion.

Being very weary with often going backwards and forwards with his fiſh, which took up all that day to bring them home, he ſits down to reſt himſelf; and the rundlet of brandy lying by, he was tempted to take a ſup, which was at that time very much wanted, his ſpirits being very low; but was loth to taſte it, leſt he ſhould grow fond of the liquor, and grieve after it when gone. Some moments were ſpent before he could come to a reſolution: at laſt, having conſidered the uſe of it, which ſuited the preſent occaſion, he concludes to take a dram, and to uſe it like a cordial, as it was firſt intended for; but the veſſel out of which he drank, being at his mouth, the cordial turns to a nectar; one gulp decoys another down; ſo the intended dram becomes a hearty draught. The pleaſantneſs of the liquor made him forget it's nature; ſo that poor Quarll, who had, for the ſpace of near three months before, drank nothing but water, was preſently overcome with the ſtrength of the brandy, and fell aſleep in his chair, with the rundlet on his bare lap, from whence it ſoon fell to the ground, and being unſtopt, ran all out.

Being awaked with hunger, having ſlept from evening till almoſt noon of another day, which he knew not whether the ſucceeding or the next to it; ſeeing what had happened, he was ſorely vexed, and could have wept at the accident; but, conſidering the liquor which occaſioned it, might perhaps, in time, have cauſed greater miſchief, he ſoon was reconciled with the loſs, but could not with that of the right order of the days, which having entirely forgot, hindered the going on of his journal; ſo was obliged to make only a memorial. That damage being repaired, another appears of a far greater conſequence: the Sunday is loſt, which he had ſo carefully obſerved till that time. How can that be made up? 'Now,' ſaid he, 'ſhall I daily be in danger of 'breaking the Sabbath, knowing not 'the day. Oh, fatal liquor! that ever 'thou wert invented to cauſe ſo much 'miſchief! Murder, adulteries, and 'blaſphemies, are daily, by thy moſt 'pernicious uſe, occaſioned. But why 'ſhould I lay the blame upon the uſe, 'when it is the abuſe that does the hurt? 'and exclaim againſt a thing, which being taken in moderation, is of ſo great 'a benefit, reviving a fainting heart, 'raiſing ſinking ſpirits, warming cold 'and decayed nature, and aſſuaging ſe'veral pains?' So blames himſelf highly for gratifying his appetite with that wherewith he only ought to have refreſhed nature; and ſince that often miſguided faculty had prompted him to commit the fault, he dedicated that day, in which he became ſenſible of it, to prayers and faſting; and every ſeventh from that, he ſet apart for divine worſhip only, which he hoped would keep him from breaking the Commandments, for keeping holy the Sabbath Day; it being not certain, that the day appointed by the Church for that purpoſe, was the very day God had ſanctified for reſt: ſo went to the place

* Leſt the reader ſhould think theſe and the following verſes to be the effect of my own brain, I ſolemnly proteſt they are what I found in his Memoirs, written with his own hand.

where

where the echoes, in many different and melodious sounds, repeated his thanksgivings to the Almighty, which he had fixed upon to pay his devotion, and there spent the rest of the day in prayers, and singing of psalms.

The next morning, having breakfasted on some of his usual bread, and a slice of the cheese he found in the chest, he goes about curing his fish, in order to salt them: having laid by as many for the present use, as he thought he could eat whilst fresh, he improves the fair weather to dry one part of the remainder, and keeps the rest in pickle.

The winter being near at hand, and the weather growing damp and cold, hinders him from his walks; so, being confined within doors, he employs his idle hours in beautifying his utensils, which were not to be used on the fire; and bestowed some pains in scraping and polishing the rest of his shells, some as fine as though they had been makers of pearl; which made them not only more fit for their intended uses, but also a great ornament to his barrack, which he shelved round with plaited twigs after the manner of his table, and so set them upon it.

Thus he spent the best part of the winter, making no farther remarks, but that it was very sharp, attended with high winds, and abundance of hail and snow, which obliged him to make a broom to sweep it away from about his hut, which otherwise would have been damaged by it.

But shivering Winter, having exhausted his frosty stores, and weary with vexing Nature, retired; Boreas also, grown faint with hard blowing, is forced to retreat into his cave; gentle Zephyrus (who still then kept up in his temperate cell) now comes forth to usher in the blooming Spring; so mildly slips on to inform Nature of her favourite's approach, who at the joyful news, put on her gay enamelled garb, and out of her rich wardrobe, supplies all vegetables with new vesture, to welcome the most lovely guest. The feathered choristers also receive new strength; their tender lungs are repaired from the injuries the foggy and misty air did occasion; and, thus revived, are placed on every budding tree, to grace his entrance with their harmonious notes.

Quarll also, whom bad weather had confined within doors a considerable time, which had in a great measure numbed his limbs, and dulled his senses, now finds himself quite revived: he no longer can keep within; the fair weather invites him out; the singing birds on every side call to him; Nature itself fetches him out, to behold her treasures.

Having, with unspeakable pleasure, walked some time, diverted with the sweet melody of various kinds of singing birds, and the sight of abundance of different sorts of blossomed trees and blooming flowers; all things within the island inspiring joy; he had the curiosity to go and view the sea: so goes over his bridge; and then, at the other side of the rock, he finds more objects, requiring as much admiration, but affording a great deal less pleasure; vast mountains of ice, floating up and down, threatening all that came in their way.

These terrible effects of the winter, which to that time he was a stranger to, occasioned his making these reflections:

'He who on billows roves, riches or wealth
'to gain,
'Is ever in danger, and labours oft in vain;
'If Fortune on him smiles, giving his toil
'success,
'Each day new cares arise, which mar his
'happiness.
'The only treasure, then, worth laying
'up in store,
'Is a contented mind, which never leaves
'one poor;
'He is not truly rich, who hankers after
'more.'

So, having returned Heaven thanks for his happy state, he creeps to the north-east side of the rock, at the foot of which lay an extraordinary large whale, which the late high wind had cast there, and died for want of water. 'If this,' said he, 'is all the damage that has been done 'last winter, it may be borne;' so went down, and measured the length of it, which was above thirty yards, and proportionable in bigness. There were shoals of small fishes swimming about it in the shallow water wherein it lay, as rejoicing at it's death. 'Thus,' said he, 'the oppressed rejoice at a tyrant's fall. What 'numbers of these have been destroyed 'to make this monstrous bulk of fat! 'Well, happy are they, who, like me, 'are under Heaven's government only.' So, with his knife, which he always carried in his pocket, cuts several slices of the whale, and throws them to the small fishes, saying—'It is but just ye should, 'at

'at last, feed on that which so long fed 'on you;' and as oil ran in abundance from the places he had cut the slices out of, it vexed him to see that wasted which might turn to good money: 'But why,' said he, 'should I be disturbed at it? 'What use have I for any? Providence 'takes none; it gives me all *gratis*.' So goes on feeling for oysters with his staff, which he always walked with.

Having at last found a hole, where, by their rattling at the bottom with his staff, he judged there might be a pretty many, he marks the place, and goes home to contrive some instrument to drag them up, being yet too cold for him to go in the water; and as he had no tool but his knife and hatchet, both improper to make a hole in a board, as requisite to make a rake, which was wanting for that purpose, he beats out the end of his chest, in which there was a knot: so, having driven it out, he fastens the small end of a poll to it. Thus equipped, he went and raked up oysters, which added one dish to his ordinary, and sauce to others; yet, at length, his stomach growing qualmish with eating altogether fish, and drinking nothing but water withal, he wishes he could have a little flesh, which he might easily, there being animals enough in the wood apparently fit for food; but then he must deprive them of their lives, barely to make his own more easy.

Thus he debates with himself for some time, whether or no it would not be injustice for him (who only by a providential accident was brought thither to save his life) now to destroy those creatures to whom nature has given a being, in a land out of man's reach to disturb: 'Yet nature requires what seems to be 'against nature to grant: I am faint, 'and like to grow worse the longer I 'abstain from flesh.'

Having paused awhile—'Why,' said he, 'should I be so scrupulous? Were 'not all things created for the use of 'man? Now, whether is it not worse to 'let a man perish, than to destroy any 'other creature for his relief? Nature 'craves it, and Providence gives it: now, 'not to use it in necessity, is under-'valuing the gift.'

So, having concluded upon catching some of those animals he had seen in the wood, he considers by what means, having no dogs to hunt, nor guns to shoot. Having paused awhile, he resolves upon making gins, wherewith he had seen hares catched in Europe: thus, taking some of the cords which he found with the sail at the outside of the rock, he goes to work, and makes several, which he fastens at divers gaps in the thickset, within the wood, through which he judged that sort of beast he had a mind for went.

Impatient to know the success of his snares, he gets up betimes the next morning, and goes to examine them; in one of which he found a certain animal something like a fawn, the colour of a deer, but feet and ears like a fox, and as big as a well grown hare. He was much rejoiced at his game, whose mouth he immediately opened, to see if he could find out whether it fed upon grass, or lived upon prey: the creature being caught by the neck, and strangled with struggling, before it died had brought up in it's throat some of the greens it had been eating, which very much pleased him; accounting those that lived upon flesh as bad as carrion.

Having returned thanks for his good luck, he takes it home in order to dress part of it for his dinner; so cases and guts it: but it's proving to be a female, big with three young ones, grieved him to the heart, and made him repent making those killing nooses—'What pity,' said he, 'so many lives should be lost, 'and creatures wasted! One would have 'served me four days; and here are four 'killed at once. Well, henceforth, to 'prevent the like evil, I will take alive 'what I just want, and save all the fe-'males.' So, having stuck a long stick at both ends in the ground, making a half circle, he hangs one quarter of the animal upon a string before a good fire, and so roasts it.

His dinner being ready, having said grace, he set to eating with an uncommon appetite; and, whether it was the novelty of the dish, or that the meat did really deserve the praise, he really thought he never eat any thing of flesh, till then, comparable to it, either for taste or tenderness.

Having dined both plentifully and deliciously, he most zealously returns kind Providence thanks for the late and all favours received; then, pursuant to his resolution, he goes about making nets, in order to take his game alive for the future; and as he had no small twine to make it with, he was obliged to unravel some of the sail which he luckily

had by him; and with the thread twiſt ſome, of the bigneſs he judged proper for that uſe.

Having made a ſufficient quantity, he makes a couple of nets, about four feet ſquare, which he faſtens in the room of the killing ſnares; ſo retired, and reſolved to come and examine them every morning.

Several days paſſed without taking any thing, ſo that he wanted fleſh a whole week; which did begin to diſorder his ſtomach, but not his temper; being entirely reſigned to the will of Providence, and fully contented with whatever Heaven was pleaſed to ſend.

One afternoon, which was not his cuſtomary time of day to examine his nets, being too viſible in the day-time for game to run in, he happened to walk in the wood, to take the full dimenſions thereof, ſo chanced to go by his nets; in one of which were taken two animals as big as a kid ſix weeks old, of a bright dun, their horns upright and ſtrait, their ſhape like a ſtag, moſt curiouſly limbed, a ſmall tuft of hair on each ſhoulder and hip. By their horns, which were but ſhort, they appeared to be very young, which rejoiced him the more, being in hopes to tame thoſe which he did not want for preſent uſe; ſo carried them home, joyful of his game, depending upon a good dinner: but was ſadly diſappointed; the animals he found were antelopes (calling to mind he had ſeen them in his travels) which, proving both females, he had made a reſolution to preſerve. Though they were too young to be with kid, and he in great need of fleſh, yet he would not kill them; ſo with cords faſtens them to the outſide of his lodge; and, with conſtant feeding them, in two months time made them ſo tame, that they followed him up and down; which added much to the pleaſure he already took in his habitation, which by that time was covered with green leaves, both top and ſides, the ſtakes it was made of having ſtruck root, and ſhot out young branches; whoſe ſtrength increaſing that ſummer, to fill up the vacancy between each plant, he pulled the turfs, wherewith he had covered the outſide and top of the hut between them, to keep the cold out in the winter.

His former hut, being now become a pleaſant arbour, gave him encouragement to beſtow ſome pains about it towards the embelliſhment of it, which ſeemed to depend on being well attended. He reſolved upon keeping it pruned and watered, the better to make it grow thick and faſt, which anſwered his intent; for, in three years time, the ſtems of every plant that compoſed the arbour were grown quite cloſe, and made a ſolid wall of about ſix inches thick, covered with green leaves without, which lay moſt regular and even, and within had a moſt agreeable ſmooth bark, of a pleaſant olive-colour.

His late arbour being, by his care and time, and nature's aſſiſtance, become a matchleſs lodge, as intended by nature for ſomething more than human gueſts, he now conſults to make it as commodious as beautiful. 'Here is,' ſaid he, 'a delightful dwelling, warm in the 'winter, and cool in the ſummer; de-'lightful to the eye, and comfortable to 'the body; pity it ſhould be employed 'to any uſe, but repoſe and delight!' So reſolved upon making a kitchen near it. Thus having fixed upon a place convenient at the ſide of his lodge, about ſix feet from it, twelve in length, and eight in breadth, which he encloſed with the turfs that covered the outſide of his arbour, before it was ſufficiently thick to keep out the cold; then, having laid ſticks acroſs the top of the walls, which were about eight feet high, he lays turf thereon, and ſo covers it, leaving an open place for the ſmoak to go out.

The outſide being done, he goes about inſide neceſſaries, as fire-places, to roaſt and boil at; thus cuts a hole in the ground, at a ſmall diſtance from the wall, after the manner of ſtew-ſtoves in noblemen's kitchens; then, at another place, he ſets two flat ſtones, about eight or nine inches broad, and one foot long, edgeways, oppoſite to one another, near two feet aſunder; then puts a third in the ſame manner, at the end of the other two; ſo makes a fire-place fit to roaſt at: then, for other conveniencies, he weaves twigs about ſticks, ſtuck in the wall on one ſide of the kitchen, where he lays the ſhells fit for utenſils, which both adorned and furniſhed it.

Having compleated that piece of work, he goes and viſits his plantations, which he finds in a thriving condition; the roots being in ſix months time grown from the bigneſs of a pea (as they were when firſt ſet) to that of an egg: his

his antelopes, alſo, were come to their full growth, and compleat beauty, which exceeded moſt four-footed beaſts; having a majeſtic preſence, body, and limbs, repreſenting a ſtag, and the noble march of a horſe: ſo every thing concurred to his happineſs. For which, having returned his moſt liberal Benefactor his grateful acknowledgments, he thinks on means to prevent any obſtructions that may intercept the continuation thereof; and as the want of cloaths was the only cauſe, he could think of, to make him uneaſy, having but the jacket and hoſe which were given him on board, to ſave his own cloaths, which, when worn out, he could not recruit; therefore, to accuſtom himſelf to go without, he thins thoſe he had, ſo takes away the lining from the outſide of his cloathing, in order to wear the thickeſt in the coldeſt weather; and ſo thins his dreſs by degrees, till at laſt, he went quite naked.

Having thus concluded, as being the beſt ſhift neceſſity could raiſe him, he falls to ripping his jacket, in the lining whereof he finds ſeven peas, and three beans, which were got in at a hole at the corner of the pocket.

Thoſe few made him wiſh for more, which he had no room to hope for, they being raiſed by ſeed, which the iſland did not produce: 'Theſe few,' ſaid he, 'which at preſent are hardly ſufficient 'to ſatisfy a woman's longing, may, 'with time and induſtry, be improved 'to a quantity large enough to ſerve me 'for a meal;' then lays them up againſt a proper time to ſet them. So ſpent the remainder of that ſummer in walking about the iſland, watering his lodge, weeding his root plantation, attending his nets, which now and then ſupplied him with an antelope or goat, to eat at intervals between fiſh he commonly found on the rock after high winds and ſtorms; never failing to viſit the ſea three or four times a week, according as the weather did prove; thus diverting many anxious hours with variety of objects that element affords. Sometimes he had the pleaſure of ſeeing great whales chacing one another, ſpouting large ſtreams of water out of their gills and noſtrils; at other times, numbers of beautiful dolphins rolling amongſt the waves; now and then a quantity of ſtrange monſtrous fiſh playing on the ſurface of the ſea, ſome whereof had heads (not common to fiſhes) like thoſe of hogs; others not unlike thoſe of dogs, calves, horſes, lions, bulls, goats, and ſeveral other creatures: ſome chacing another ſort; which, to avoid being taken, would quit their element, and ſeek refuge in the air, and fly ſome yards above the water, till their fins, being dry, obliged them to plunge in again.

Theſe paſtimes being generally ſucceeded with bad weather, and dreadful ſtorms, checked the pleaſure they gave, with a dread of the evil that threatened to follow. Thus commiſerating the caſe of thoſe whoſe misfortune is to be expoſed to them. Having ſpent ſome time in reflection, he goes to his uſual devotion; and calling to mind that, in all that time, he never ſaw a young fiſh in it, he conjectured that ſomething might deſtroy the ſmall ones; and as he imagined ſo it proved, for, at his approach, a large fowl flew out of the pond with a fiſh in it's bill, being too large for it to ſwallow.

At that diſtance, the bird being alſo upon the wing, he could neither diſcern colour nor make; but he had the ſatisfaction of diſcovering the cauſe why the fiſhes did not increaſe, they being devoured when young by that creature; which, to prevent for the future, he ſtudies means to kill the deſtroyer, nets not being proper inſtruments; it being requiſite for that purpoſe, to have one all round, as alſo to cover the pond, which was impoſſible, by reaſon of it's largeneſs; and a leſs being of no uſe, the birds probably not coming to one certain place. He wiſhed for a gun, and ammunition fitting, as being the moſt probable things to ſucceed; but no ſuch inſtrument being within his reach, he ponders again; during which time a croſs-bow offers itſelf to his mind, but is as diſtant from his reach as the gun. It is true, there was ſtuff enough in the iſland to make many, but no tools but a hatchet and a pocket knife; wherewith if he made ſhift to cut and ſhape a bow, he could not make a latch and ſpring neceſſary to it; ſo he muſt not think on it. Yet, a bow being the only thing he could apply to, he goes about one forthwith. Thus having picked a branch of a tree, which had the reſemblance of yew, and as tough, of which they are ſometimes made, he, with the tools he had, made ſhift to make one, of about ſix feet long, and arrows of the ſame, which he hardens and ſtraightens over the

fire; then, having ſlit them at one end, about two or three inches, he ſlips in a bit of parchment, cut ſharp at one end, and about two or three inches at the other; then ties the end cloſe, to keep it in, which ſerved for feathers; and with the ravelling of ſome of the ſail he makes a ſtring to it.

Thus equipped for an archer, wanting nothing but ſkill, which is only to be gained by practice, he daily exerciſes ſhooting at a mark for the ſpace of a fortnight; in which time he made ſuch an improvement, that in three ſhoots he would hit a mark of about three inches ſquare, at near fifty paces diſtance.

Being ſufficiently ſkilled, he goes and lies in wait for his deſired game; ſo placed himſelf behind a tree, as near to the pond as he could, whither the bird came in a few hours after.

The creature being pitched upon the bank, never ſtood ſtill, but kept running round, watching for a ſizeable fiſh fit to ſwallow; ſo that he had no opportunity to ſhoot: till having, at laſt, ſpied out one, it launched itſelf into the pond, but roſe more eaſily, which gave him time to take aim; nevertheleſs, he miſſed it, being in motion; but when come to the top, he ſtruck it through the body, as it opened it's wings, and laid it flat on the other ſide of the pond. He took it up, wonderfully pleaſed at his good ſucceſs in the firſt time of his practiſing his new-acquired art; yet, having taken notice of the bird's beauty, he had a regret for it's death, though he might, in time, have rued it's living; the ſtock of fiſh weekly decreaſing, by his own catching one now-and-then with a ſmall net he made for that uſe, when ſhort of other proviſions; and their recruiting prevented by that bird's daily devouring their young.

The inexpreſſible beauty of the feathers, which were after the nature of a drake, every one diſtinguiſhed from another by a rim round the edge thereof, about the breadth of a large thread, and of a changeable colour, from red to aurora and green; the ribs of a delightful blue, and the feathers pearl-colour, ſpeckled with a bright yellow; the breaſt and belly, (if it might be ſaid to be of any particular colour) was that of a dove's feathers, rimmed like the back, diverſely changing; the head, which was like that of a ſwan for make, was purple alſo, changing as it moved; the bill like burniſhed gold: eyes like a ruby, with a rim of gold round it; the feet the ſame as the bill; the ſize of the bird was between a middling gooſe and a duck, and in ſhape reſembling a ſwan.

Having bemoaned the death of that delightful creature, he carefully takes out it's fleſh, which, corrupting, would ſpoil the outſide; then fills the ſkin with ſweet herbs, which he dried for that uſe; and having ſewed up the place he had cut open, to take the fleſh out, he ſet it up in his lodge.

His good ſucceſs in archery made him love the exerciſe; ſo that what odd hours he had in the day (beſides thoſe he ſet apart for his divine worſhip, and thoſe neceſſary occupations about his lodge, plantations, and making remarks) he beſtowed in ſhooting at the mark; which in time made him ſo expert, that he hardly would miſs a ſtanding mark the bigneſs of a dove, at forty or fifty yards diſtance, once in ten times; and would ſhoot tolerably well flying; having once occaſion to try it upon a monſtrous eagle, which often flew rounding over the place where his antelopes and goats fed, near his lodge; which he ſhot at, fearing it would damage them, and killed with the ſecond arrow.

The ſummer being over, during which, having been much taken up about his habitation and plantations, he had neither time nor opportunity to make remarks, farther than it was ſome days very ſhowery, and for the moſt part generally very hot; but now the weather being grown ſomething cold, and the wind pretty ſharp, he muſt be obliged to put on ſome cloaths to keep it off, being as yet too tender to go any longer without; next to provide for his antelopes againſt the approaching winter; ſo makes a lodge for them, at the backſide of his kitchen, with ſticks, which he drove into the ground, about two feet from the wall, and then bends them about three feet from the ground, and ſticks them in the ſaid wall, and ſmaller branches he interwove between them: he ſhuts up the front, and covers the top, leaving both ends open for the antelopes to go in at; then lays graſs (which he dried on purpoſe) in the ſaid lodge, for them to lie on. Thus, having dug up a conſiderable quantity of roots, and being already ſtocked with ſalt fiſh, both dry and in pickle, he was pretty well provided for his cattle and himſelf againſt the enſuing winter, which proved much like the preceding one, only not ſo ſtormy.

The

The ſucceeding ſpring having awaked ſlumbering Nature, and revived what the preceding hard ſeaſon had cauſed to droop, every vegetable puts on new cloathing, and recovers it's wonted beauty; each animal aſſumes freſh vigour; the beaſts in the wood leap and bound for joy; and each bird on the trees ſings for gladneſs. The whole creation is, as it were, repaired, and every creature decked with new life. Love, by Nature's direction, for the increaſe of every kind, warms their harmleſs breaſts; each animal ſeeks a mate; our tame antelopes quit their abode, and range the woods for the relief ordained to quell their innocent paſſion; which being aſſuaged, they return home, pregnant with young, to their maſter's great ſatisfaction; who, having given them over, was doubly rejoiced to ſee them come again in an increaſing condition. 'Heaven be praiſed!' ſaid he, 'I ſhall 'have a ſtock of my own; and will not 'fear wanting.'

So, having made fitting preparations againſt their kidding, he goes and examines the improvement of his new plantation, where he found his roots grown full as large as any of thoſe that grew wild. 'Make me thankful!' ſaid he; 'I am now provided with all neceſſary 'food: I ſhall no more need to rob thoſe 'poor creatures of that which nature 'had provided for their own proper uſe.' Next he goes and views his ſmall ſtock of peaſe and beans, which he found in a very promiſing caſe: ſo, whilſt the weather was fair, he falls to clearing a ſpot of ground to ſet them in, as they increaſed.

Turning up the ground, he found ſeveral ſorts of roots that looked to be eatable, ſome whereof were as big as a large carrot, others leſs. He broke a bit of every one; ſome of which breaking ſhort, and not being ſtringy, he judged they might be eatable: then he ſmells them; and finding the ſcent not diſagreeable, he taſtes them. Some were ſweetiſh; others ſharp and hot, like horſe-radiſh; and thoſe he propoſes to uſe inſtead of ſpice. 'Sure,' ſaid he, 'theſe, be'ing of a pleaſant ſcent and ſavour, can'not be of an offenſive nature.' So, having manured his ground, he takes a ſimple of every root which he judged eatable, and boils them, as the ſureſt way to experience their goodneſs.

Moſt of them proved not only paſſable good, but extraordinary; ſome eating like parſneps, others almoſt like carrots, but rather more agreeable; ſome like beets and turnips; every one, in their ſeveral kinds, as good as ever he eat in England, but of different colours and make; ſome being bluiſh, others black; ſome red, and ſome yellow: theſe, though not wanted, having ſufficient to gratify a nicer taſte than his, were nevertheleſs extremely welcome, being ſomething like his native country fare and product. So having returned thanks for this moſt agreeable addition to his ordinary, he ſets a mark to every herb which thoſe roots bore, in order to get ſome of the ſeed to ſow in a ground he would prepare: ſo, being provided with fleſh, fiſh, herbs, and ſeveral ſorts of roots, he goes and examines what improvement his peaſe and beans have made; which he found increaſed to admiration, the ſeven peas having produced one thouſand, and the three beans one hundred. Having returned thanks for that vaſt increaſe, he lays them by, in order to ſet them at a proper ſeaſon, as he had done the year before.

By this time his antelopes had kidded, one of them having brought four young ones, and the ſecond three. This vaſt addition to his proviſions very much rejoiced him, being ſure now not to want fleſh at his need, which before he was in danger of, finding but ſeldom any thing in his net: ſo makes account to live upon two of the young bucks whilſt they laſted; killing one as ſoon as fit for meat, and ſo now and then another, ſaving only five to breed; one whereof ſhould be a mate to keep the females, in rutting-time, from the wood; leſt, at one time or other, they ſhould ſtay away for good and all.

The old ones being well fed, as he always took care to do, providing for them ſtore of thoſe greens he knew they loved, as alſo boiled roots for them now-and-then, of which they are very fond; the young ones throve apace, and grew very fat; ſo that in three weeks time they were large, and fit to eat. He killed one; which being roaſted, proved to be more delicious than any houſe-lamb, ſucking-pig, young fawn, or any other ſuckling whatever.

Having lived upon that, with now-and-then a little fiſh, about one month, which

which was as long as he could keep it eatable, having dreſſed it at two different times, five days interval, eating the cold remains in ſeveral manners; reſerving one of the other two males for a time he ſhould be ſtarved, and in want of fleſh; but was unluckily diſappointed by a parcel of large eagles, which flying one morning over the place where the young antelopes were playing, being of a gay, as well as active diſpoſition, who launched themſelves with precipitation upon the male he reſerved for time of need, and one of the females, which he kept for breed: ſeeing his beloved diverters carrying away by thoſe birds of prey, he runs in for his bow, but came too late with it, the eagles being gone.

Having loſt his two dear antelopes, eſpecially the female, having doomed the male for his own eating, he hardly could forbear weeping, to think of their being cruelly torn to pieces by thoſe ravenous creatures. Thus having for ſome time lamented his loſs, and bewailed their hard fate, he thinks on means to prevent the like evil for the time to come; and as his bow was not always at hand, he reſolves upon making a net, and faſtens it between the trees he ſaw them come in at.

The ſucceeding winter proving very wet and windy, gave him but little invitation to take his uſual walks; ſo having every thing he had occaſion for at hand, he kept cloſe to his net-making; for which, having twine to twiſt, and thread to ravel out, to make the ſaid twine kept him employed till the following ſpring, which came on apace.

Having finiſhed his net, and every thing which belonged to it, he goes and faſtens it to the trees, as he had propoſed; then takes a walk to his new plantations, which he found in a thriving condition; for which, and other benefits already received, he reſolves, as in duty bound, to attend at his uſual place of worſhip, and ſing thankſgiving pſalms, which the hardneſs of the weather had kept him from all the late winter; but it coming into his mind, that whilſt he was at his devotion, returning thanks for the fair proſpect of a plentiful crop, his antelopes would break into the cloſe, the hedge being as yet but thin, and devour the promiſing buds, which are the principal occaſion of his devotion; this not altogether improper conſideration puts a ſad check to his religious intention; and though there was a vaſt obligation to prompt him to the performance of that part of his duty, yet he could not, with wiſdom, run the hazard, out of mere devotion, to loſe ſo promiſing a crop, which he ſhould never be able to retrieve, all his ſtock of ſeed being then in graſs.

As he was debating in his mind between religion and reaſon, whether the latter ought not to be a director to the former, he perceived his antelopes making towards the peas, whither they, doubtleſs, would have got in, had he not returned, and driven them another way: which accident convinced him he might find a more proper time to go about his devotion, no man being required to worſhip to his prejudice. So, having put off his religious duty till he had better ſecured his peas and beans, he cuts a parcel of branches, wherewith he ſtops thoſe gaps to prevent the creatures going in; and having compleated his work, he goes to his devotion, adding to his uſual thankſgiving a particular collect for his luckily being in the way to prevent his being fruſtrated of the bleſſing Heaven ſo fairly promiſed to beſtow on his labours.

Having paid his devotion, he walks about the iſland, being all the way delighted with the birds celebrating their Maker's praiſe, in their different harmonious notes. 'Every thing in nature,' ſaid he, 'anſwers the end of it's creation, but ungrateful man! who, ambitious to be wiſe, as his Creator, only learns to make himſelf wretched.' Thus he walks till the evening, making ſeveral reflections on the different conditions of men, preferring his preſent ſtate to that of Adam before his fall, who could not be ſenſible of happineſs, having never known a reverſe; which, otherwiſe, he would have been more careful to prevent. Being come home, and near bed-time, he firſt eats his ſupper; and then, having performed his cuſtomary religious ſervice, he goes to bed. The next morning, after paying his uſual devotion, he takes a walk to his plantations, on which he implores a continuation of the proſperous condition they appear to be in; next, he goes to examine his nets, in which he finds a brace of fowls like ducks, but twice as large, and exceeding beautiful. The drake (which he knew by a coloured feather

on

(his rump) was of a fine cinnamon colour upon his back, his breast of a marine blue, his belly of a deep orange, and neck green, his head purple, his eyes, bill, and feet, red; every colour changing moft agreeably as they moved. The duck was alfo very beautiful, but of quite different colours, and much paler than the drake's.

The difappointment in catching thofe delightful fowls, inftead of ravenous eagles, as he had purpofed, no ways difpleafed him, but he rather was rejoiced to have fuch beautiful fowls to look at; yet it went much againft his mind to deprive thofe creatures of their liberty, (the greateft comfort in life) which Nature took fuch pains to adorn: 'But,' faid he, 'they were created for 'the ufe of man: fo, in keeping them 'for my pleafure, they will but anfwer 'the end of their creation. Their confinement fhall be no ftricter than 'my own; they fhall have the whole 'ifland to range in.' He then pinions them, puts them in the pond, and makes baftets for them to fhelter in, which he places in the branches of thofe trees that hung clofeft to the water, taking particular care to feed them daily with roots mafhed and boiled, and the guts of the fifh, and other creatures, he ufed for his own eating; which made them thrive mainly, and take to the place; fo that they bred in their feafon.

The five antelopes had by this time kidded, and brought fixteen young ones: his peas and beans alfo were wonderfully improved, having that feafon enough to ftock the ground the year following. Thus he returned kind Providence thanks for the vaft increafe, and concludes to live upon the young antelopes as long as they lafted, referving only one for fuck of the old ones, to keep them in milk, of which he had taken notice they had plenty, defigning to draw it daily for his own ufe; fo that in a little time he had enough to fkim for cream, which he ufed for fauce inftead of butter, and made fmall cheefes of the reft. Now, having a pretty ftore of dairy-ware, he refolves to make a place to keep it in; the kitchen wherein he was obliged to lay his falt-fifh (which commonly fmells ftrong) not being a proper place for cream and milk: for which end he makes a dairy-houfe at the other fide of his dwelling, with branches of trees, after the manner of a cleft arbour, and thatches it over with grafs; which anfwering the kitchen in form and fituation, made uniform wings, that added as much to the beauty as conveniency of the habitation.

Having compleated his dairy, he proceeds in his refolution of making cheefe, having learned the way in Holland; and for want of rennet to turn his milk, he takes fome of the horfe-radifh feed, which, being of a hot nature, had the fame effect. Having curd to his mind, he feafons it to his palate; then with his hatchet he cuts a notch round in the bark of a tree, about eighteen inches in circumference; and a fecond in the fame manner, fix inches below that; then flits the circle, and with his knife gently opens it, parting it from the tree. Thus he makes as many hoops as he judged would contain his paile, which, being girded round with cords to keep them from opening, he fills with the faid paile, and lays them by till fit to eat.

This being done, which compleated his provifions, he returns thanks for thofe bleffings which had been fo liberally beftowed on him. 'Now,' faid he, 'Heaven be praifed! I exceed a prince 'in happinefs: I have a habitation ftrong 'and lafting, beautiful and convenient, 'freehold; a ftore of comforts, with all 'neceffaries of life at free-coft, which I enjoy with peace and pleafure uncontrouled: yet I think there is ftill fomething 'wanting to compleat my happinefs; 'if a partner in grief leffens forrow, 'certainly it muft in delight augment 'pleafure. What objects of admiration are here concealed, and, like a 'mifer's treafure, hid from the world! 'If man, who was created for blifs, 'could have been compleatly happy 'alone, he would not have had a companion given him.' Thus he walks about thoughtful till bed-time.

In that difpofition he goes to bed, and foon fell afleep. The night alfo being windy, added to his heavy difpofition: but his mind finds no repofe; it ftill runs on upon the fubject, that took it up the day before, and forms ideas fuitable to his inclination: and as folitude was the motive of it's being difturbed, he indulges it with the thought of company, dreaming that the fame of his ftation, and happy ftate of life, was fpread about the world; that it prompted a vaft number of people, from all parts, to come to it, which at laft induced feveral princes

to

to claim a right to it; which being decided by a bloody war, a governor was sent, who laid taxes, demanded duties, raised rents, and warns him to be gone, having fixed upon his habitation for himself to dwell in. Being sadly disturbed, he cries out in his sleep—'This is a 'great punishment for my uneasiness: 'could I not be contented with being 'lord of this island, without provoking 'Heaven to bring me under the power 'of extorting governors!'

There happening a great noise, he starts out of his sleep, with the thought of hearing a proclamation; and cried out—'Alas! it is too late to proclaim an 'evil which is already come.' But being thoroughly awake, and the noise still continuing, he found he had been dreaming, which very much rejoiced him: he therefore puts on his cloaths, and hastens to the place he heard the noise come from.

Being within forty or fifty yards thereof, he saw a number of monkeys of two different kinds; one sort squealing and fighting against the other, without intermixing, but still rallying, as they scattered in the scuffle. He stood some time admiring the order they kept in; and the battle still continuing as fierce as at first, he advanced to see what they fought about; for he took notice they very much strove to keep their ground.

At his approach the battle ceased; and the combatants, retiring at some distance, left the spot of ground, on which they fought, clear; whereon lay a considerable quantity of wild pomegranates which the wind had shook off the trees the night before, and which were the occasion of their strife.

His coming having caused a truce, every one of those creatures keeping still and quiet during his stay, he resolves to use his endeavours to make a solid peace; and as that difference had arisen from the fruit there present, to which he could see no reason but that each kind had an equal right, he divides it into two equal parcels, which he lays opposite to each other towards both the parties, retiring a little way, to see whether this expedient would decide the quarrel; which answered his intention, those animals quietly coming to that share next to them, and peaceably carrying it away, each to their quarters. This occasioned several reflections on the frivolous, and often unjust quarrels that arise among princes, which create such bloody wars, as prove the destruction of vast numbers of their subjects. 'If monarchs,' said he, 'always acted with as much reason as 'these creatures, how much blood and 'money would they save!' Thus goes on to his usual place of worship, in order to return thanks, that he was free of that evil, the dream whereof had so tortured his mind; though he confessed he justly deserved the reality, for his uneasiness in the happiest of circumstances.

Having paid his devotion, he takes a walk to see how his peas and beans came on, which he found in a very improving disposition, each stem bearing a vast number of well-filled pods. 'Heaven 'be praised!' said he, 'I shall eat of 'this year's crop, and have sufficient to 'stock my ground the ensuing one.'

Thus being plentifully supplied with necessaries, and in a pleasant island, every thing about him being come to perfection, his dwelling, which seems intended by nature for some immortal guest, being, by time, yearly repaired and improved, leaving no room for care; yet the unwise man, as if an enemy to his own ease, cannot be contented with the enjoyment of more than he could reasonably crave, but must disturb his mind with what concerns him not. 'What 'pity,' said he, 'so delightful a habi-'tation, attended with such conveniencies, and situated in so wholesome an 'air, and fruitful a land, should at my 'death lose all those wonderful properties, and become useless for want 'of somebody to enjoy them! What 'admiration will here be lost for want 'of beholders! But what kind of man 'could I settle it upon, worthy of so 'fine an inheritance? Were it at my 'pleasure to chuse myself an heir, such 'only appear virtuous, whose weak nature confides to chastity. Every constitution cannot bear excess: want of 'courage occasions mildness, and lack 'of strength good temper; thus virtue 'is made a cloak to infirmity. But why 'do I thus willingly hamper myself 'with those cares Providence has been 'pleased to free me of?

'Leave the miser the knowing care,
'Who'll succeed him, or be his heir;
'That racks his soul with discontent,
'Left what he rak'd for should be spent.
'His gold to him is far more dear,
'Than all his friends or kindred near.'

Thus

Thus he holds the island from Providence: freely he bequeaths it to whom Providence shall think fit to bestow it upon: and, that his heir may the better know the worth of the gift, he draws a map of the whole estate; and made an inventory of every individual tenement, appurtenances, messuages, goods and chattels, and also a draught of the terms and conditions he is to hold the here mentioned possessions upon; viz.

Imprimis, A fair and most pleasant island, richly stocked with fine trees, and adorned with several delightful groves, planted and improved by Nature, stored with choice and delicious roots and plants for food, bearing peas and beans; likewise a noble fish-pond, well stocked with divers sorts of curious fish; and a spacious wood, harbouring several sorts of wild-fowl, and beasts fit for a king's table.

Item, A dwelling commenced by Art, improved by Nature, and compleated by Time, which yearly keeps it in repair, as also it's furniture.

Item, The offices and appurtenances thereof, with the utensils thereunto belonging; which said island, dwelling, &c. are freehold, and clear from taxes; in no temporal dominion, therefore screened from any impositions, duties, and exactions; defended by Nature from invasions or assaults; guarded and supported by Providence. All which incomparable possessions are to be held upon the following terms, viz.

That whosoever shall be by Providence settled in this blessed abode, shall, morning and evening, constantly (unless prevented by ill weather or accident) attend at the east side of this island, and within the alcove Nature prepared for the lodgment of several harmonious echoes, and there pay his devotion; singing thanksgiving-psalms to the great Origin and Director of all things, whose praises he will have the comfort to hear repeated by melodious voices.

Next, he shall religiously observe and keep a seventh-day for worship only, from the rising of the sun till the going down thereof: therefore he shall, the day before, make all necessary provision for that day.

That he shall, after any tempestuous wind or storm, visit the sea at the outside of the rock, at the east, south, west, and north ends, in order to assist any one in distress.

He shall not be wasteful of any thing whatsoever, especially of any creature's life; killing no more than what is necessary for his health: but shall every day examine his nets, setting at liberty the overplus of his necessity, lest they should perish in their confinement.

He must also keep every thing in the same order and cleanness he shall find them in; till and manure the ground yearly; set and sow plants and seeds, fit for food, in their proper seasons.

Having written this at the bottom of the map he had drawn, being supper-time, he takes his meal; then goes to his usual evening devotion; and, after an hour's walk, to his bed, sleeping quietly all night, as being easy in his mind.

The next morning he takes his usual walks, and visits his nets. In that he had set for eagles, he found a fowl as big as a turkey, but the colour of a pheasant, only a tail like a partridge: this having no sign of being a bird of prey, he was loth to kill it; but having had no fresh meat for above a week, he yields to his appetite, and dresses it, eating part thereof for his dinner: it was very fat and plump, and eat much like a pheasant, but rather tenderer, and fuller of gravy.

Though he was very well pleased with the bird he had taken, yet he had rather it had been one of the eagles which kept his young antelopes in jeopardy: but as he could not destroy them with his net, which had hung a considerable time without the intended success, he projects the prevention of their increase, by destroying their eggs, leaving his nets wholly for the use they had been successful in; and searches the clifts of the rock next to the sea, where those birds commonly build; where having found several nests, he takes away the eggs that were in them, being then their breeding time, and carries them home, in order to empty the shells, and hang them up and down in his habitation, amongst the green leaves which covered the cieling thereof; but having accidentally broke

one, and the yolk and white thereof being like that of a turkey, he had the curiosity to boil one, and taste it, which eat much after the manner of a swan's: the rest he saved to eat now and then for a change, reaping a double advantage by robbing those birds; lessening thereby the damage they might do him in time, and adding a dish to his present fare.

In this prosperous way he lived fifteen years, finding no alteration in the weather or seasons, nor meeting in all the time with any transactions worthy of record: still performing his usual exercises, and taking his walks with all the content and satisfaction his happy condition could procure; intirely forsaking all thoughts and desires of ever quitting the blessed station he then had in his possession.

Thus having walked the island over and over, (which though delightful, yet the frequent repetition of the wonders it produces, renders them, as it were, common, and less admirable) he proceeds to view the sea, whose fluid element being ever in motion, daily affords new objects of admiration.

The day being very fair, and the weather as calm, he sat down upon the rock, taking pleasure in seeing the waves roll, and, as it were, chase one another; the next pursuing the first, on which it rides, when come at; and being itself overtaken by a succeeding, is also mounted on this, wave upon wave, till come to a bulky body, too heavy for the undermost to bear, sunk all together. 'This,' said he, 'is a true emblem of ambi-'tion; men striving to outdo one ano-'ther, are often undone.'

As he was making reflections on the emptiness of vanity and pride, returning Heaven thanks that he was separated from the world, which abounds in nothing else; a ship appears at a great distance, a sight he had not seen since his shipwreck. 'Unlucky inven-'tion!' said he, 'that thou should'st 'ever come into mens thoughts! The 'Ark, which gave the first notion of a 'floating habitation, was ordered for 'the preservation of man; but it's fatal 'copies daily expose him to destruction.' Having therefore returned Heaven thanks for his being out of those dangers, he makes a solemn vow, never to return into them again, though it were to gain the world. But his resolution proved as brittle as his nature was frail: the men on board had spied him out with their perspective glasses; and supposing him to be shipwrecked, and to want relief, sent their long-boat with two men to fetch him away.

At their approach his heart alters it's motion; his blood stops from it's common course; his sinews are all stagnated; which intirely unframes his reason, and makes him a stranger to his own inclination; which struggling with his wavering resolution, occasions a debate between hope and fear: but the boat, being come pretty nigh, gave hope the advantage, and his late resolution yields to his revived inclination; which being now encouraged by a probable opportunity of being answered, rushes on to execution. He now, quitting all his former reliance on Providence, depends altogether upon his getting away, blessing the lucky opportunity of seeing his blessed country again, for which pleasure he freely quits and forsakes all the happiness he enjoyed! gladly abandoning his delightful habitation, and plentiful island. He thinks no more of Providence; his mind is intirely taken up with his voyage. But disappointment, which often attends the greatest probabilities, snatches success out of his hand before he could grasp it, and intercepts his supposedly infallible retreat: the boat could not approach him, by reason of the rocks running a great way into the sea under water; nor could he come at the boat for sharp points, and deep holes, which made it unfordable, as well as unnavigable; so that after several hours striving in vain on both sides, to come at one another, the men, after they had strove all they could but to no purpose, said something to him in a rage, which he understood not, and went without him, more wretched now than he was when he was first cast away. His full dependance upon a retreat made him abandon all further reliance on Providence, whom then he could implore; but now, having ungratefully despised Heaven's bounties, which had been so largely bestowed on him, he has forfeited all hopes of assistance from thence, and expects none from the world. Thus destitute, and in the greatest perplexity, he cries out—'Whi-'ther shall I now fly for help? The 'world can give me none, and I dare not 'crave any more from Heaven. O 'cursed delusion! but rather cursed 'weakness!

'weakneſs! Why did I give way to it? 'Had I not enough of the world, or 'was I grown weary of being happy?' So ſaying, he falls a weeping. 'Could I 'ſhed a flood of tears, ſufficient to waſh 'away my fault, or eaſe me of the re-'morſe it does create! But why does my 'diſtracted fancy propoſe impoſſibilities? 'Is not the ocean ſufficient to rid me of 'this wretched life? Then adieu, in-'fectious world,-thou magician of ini-'quity! The thoughts of which are now 'more offenſive, than the moſt nauſeous 'odour of an old ſepulchre.' Here he was going to caſt himſelf into the ſea; but a vaſt large monſter, riſing out of the water, with it's terrible jaws wide open, looking at him in a moſt dreadful manner, ſtopped the execution of his deſperate deſign. Thus, Death appearing in a different ſhape than he had propoſed to meet him in, frightens away his reſolution of dying. 'I may,' ſaid he, 'con-'demn myſelf; but vengeance belongs 'to God alone, who rejects not tears of 'repentance, but always extends his 'mercies towards the penitent; and ſince 'St. Peter, after thrice denying his 'LORD and MASTER, was, by repent-'ing and weeping over his ſin, received 'again into favour, I hope theſe my 'weak, but ſincere tokens of repentance, 'will be accepted of, for ever divorcing 'myſelf from the world, and never 'thinking of it's alluring pleaſures, but 'to deſpiſe them.' And, for the better performance of that pious reſolution, he ſets that woeful day apart (in which he was about to commit that fatal deed) for prayer and faſting. Thus he went home, and having eat nothing ſince the day before, he ſpent the remainder of that in faſting and praying; ſinging penitential pſalms till dark night, that nature urged him to repoſe.

The pains and labour he had been at in the day, climbing up and down the rock, dragging himſelf to and fro, to come at the boat, having very much racked his limbs; and the diſappointment of his full dependance on the late promiſing ſucceſs, as alſo the tormenting remorſe, and heavy grief, for his ſinful reliance thereon, much fatiguing his mind, rendered ſleep, which is ordained for the refreſhment of nature, of no manner of help to him: his thoughts are continually diſturbed with frightful viſions; all his paſt dangers glare at him, as if threatening their return; but that which terrified him moſt was, the frightful idea of the terrible monſter which roſe out of the ſea at that inſtant he was going to plunge himſelf in it.

Being awaked out of his reſtleſs ſleep, rather more fatigued than when he lay down, having ſtill the terrible aſpect of the ſea-monſter in his mind, he made ſeveral reflections on the execrable nature of his intended ſin; admiring the immenſe goodneſs of Providence, who, to deter him from the committing of the enormous act, had ordered that (beyond imagination) terrible object, as the moſt ſuitable to the barbarity of his deſign, to ſtrike into him that terror which the ſpecies of death he had fixed upon could not. Thus having with tears acknowledged the enormity of his reſolution, he returns Providence thanks for it's inеſtimable goodneſs, who (notwithſtanding his late moſt ungrateful elopement) preſerved him from eternal, as well as temporal ruin. Having paid his devotion, and ſung a thankſgiving-pſalm, he takes a little nouriſhment, his ſpirits being low with his paſt fatigue and faſting; and as he could not put out of his eyes the terrible aſpect of the monſter, which was beyond any chimerical conception, he reſolves to draw it according to the idea he had in his mind. 'Perhaps,' ſaid he, 'having often the repreſentation be-'fore mine eyes, it will make the object 'more familiar and leſs frightful.' Taking, therefore, pen and ink, and a ſheet of parchment—'Now,' ſaid he, 'how 'ſhall I repreſent what is paſt imagina-'tion to conceive? A form without like-'neſs, and yet comparable to the moſt 'terrible part of every frightful creature; 'a large head, reſembling that of a lion, 'bearing three pair of horns; one pair 'upright, like that of an antelope; ano-'ther pair like a wild goat's; two more 'bending backwards; it's face armed 'all round with darts, like a porcupine; 'vaſt great eyes, ſparkling like a flint 'ſtruck with a ſteel; it's noſe like a wild 'horſe, always ſnarling; the mouth of a 'lion, and teeth of a panther; the fences 'of an elephant, and the tuſks of a wild 'boar; ſhouldered like a giant, with 'claws like an eagle; bodied and covered 'with ſhells like a rhinoceros, and the 'colour of a crocodile.'

Having likened every different part, he proceeds in the repreſentation thereof; which being finiſhed, put him in the greateſt admiration. 'Sure,' ſaid he, 'if

'Nature had a hand in thy making, it 'was to aſſemble, in one creature, all the 'fierceſt and dreadfulleſt animals that 'are moſt frightful and terrible! Now, 'perhaps, this being conſtantly before 'me, may come leſs in my mind.' Then fixing it againſt his wall—'This,' ſaid he, 'will be alſo a memorandum of my 'late vow, never to endeavour to wiſh to 'go from hence, whatever opportunity 'offers, though attended with ever ſo 'great a probability of ſucceſs, and pro-'ſpect of gain;' fully ſettling his whole mind and affection on the ſtate and condition Heaven had been pleaſed to place him in: reſolving to let nothing enter into his thoughts, but his moſt grateful duty to ſo great a benefactor, who had ſo often and miraculouſly reſcued him from death.

Thus having entirely baniſhed the world out of his mind, which before often diſturbed it, he limits his thoughts within the bounds of his bleſſed poſſeſſion, which affords him more than is ſufficient to make his life happy; where plenty flows on him, and pleaſure attends his deſires; abounding in all things that can gratify his appetite, or delight his fancy. A herd of delightful antelopes, bounding and playing about his habitation, divert him at home; and in his walks he is entertained with the harmony of divers kinds of ſinging birds; every place he comes at offers him new objects for pleaſure: thus all ſeems to concur in compleating his happineſs.

In this moſt bleſſed ſtate he thinks himſelf as Adam before his fall, having no room for wiſhes, only that every thing may continue in it's preſent condition; but it cannot be expected, that fair weather, which ſmiles on his beauty, will not change. The ſun muſt go it's courſe, and the ſeaſons take their turn; which conſiderations muſt, for the preſent, admit ſome ſmall care. He is naked, and his tender conſtitution ſuſceptible of the cold; therefore the cloaths he was caſt away in being worn out, he is obliged to think of providing ſomething to defend his limbs from the hardneſs of the approaching winter, whilſt it is yet warm. Having conſidered what to make a wrapper of, he concludes upon uſing ſome of the ſame graſs he made his mats of, on which he lay, being ſoft and warm, very fit for that purpoſe: of this he cuts down a ſufficient quantity, which, when ready to work, he makes ſmall twine with, and plaits it in narrow braids, which he ſews together with ſome of the ſame, and ſhapes a long looſe gown, that covered him to his heels, and a cap of the ſame.

By that time he had finiſhed his winter-garb, the weather was grown cold enough for him to put it on. The froſty ſeaſon came on apace, in which there fell ſuch a quantity of ſnow, that he was forced to make a broom, and ſweep it away from about his habitation twice a day; as alſo the ſame he made to the places he had occaſion to go to, toſſing the ſnow on each ſide, which, before the winter was over, met a top, and covered it all the way; which obliged him to keep within doors for a conſiderable time, and melt ſnow inſtead of water; leſt, going for ſome, he might chance to be buried among the ſnow.

The winter being over, and the ſnow diſſolved, the gay ſpring advances apace, offering nature it's uſual aſſiſtance, repairing the damages the late froſt had done; which joyful tidings made every thing ſmile. Quarll alſo, finding himſelf revived, took his former walks, which the preceding bad weather had kept him from, though there had been no conſiderable ſtorm the winter before.

He having a mind to view the ſea, and being come to the outſide of the north-weſt end of the rock, ſees at the foot thereof ſomething like part of the body of a large hollow tree, the ends whereof were ſtopped with it's own pitch; and the middle, which was ſlit open from end to end, and kept gaping by a ſtick laid acroſs.

This put him in mind of canoes, with which the Indians paddle up and down their lakes and rivers; and being on that ſide of the rock next to the iſland of California, he fancied ſome of them were come to viſit this iſland, though not many in number; their canoes holding, at the moſt, but two men; and, for the generality, one only: yet, as ſome of theſe people are accounted great thieves, daily robbing one another, he haſtens home to ſecure what he had; but it was too late; they had been there already, and had taken away the cloaths he found in the cheſt; which being, by far, too little for him, hung careleſsly on a pin behind his door. Had they been contented with that, he would not have regarded it; but they carried away ſome of his curious ſhells, and, what grieved him moſt, the fine

fine bird he had taken such pains to dress and stuff, and care to preserve; as also his bow and arrows.

Having missed these things, which he much valued, he hastens to the outside of the rock, with his long staff in his hand, in hopes to overtake them before they could get into their canoe; but happened to go too late, they being already got near half a league from the rock. Yet they did not carry away their theft: for there arising some wind, it made the sea somewhat rough, and overset their canoe; so that what was in it was all lost but the two Indians, who most dextrously turned it on it's bottom again, and with surprizing activity, leaped into it, one at the one side, and the other at the opposite; so that the canoe being trimmed at once, they paddled out of sight.

'Having seen as much of them as he could, he walks to the north-east side, in order to discover the effect of the high wind which happened the night before.

Being come to the outside of the rock, he perceives at a distance something like a large chest, but having no lid on it. Taking that to be the product of some late shipwreck, he grieved at the fatal accident. 'How long,' reflected he, 'will 'covetousness decoy men to pursue 'wealth, at the cost of their precious 'lives? Has not Nature provided every 'nation and country a sufficiency for it's 'inhabitants? that they will rove on this 'most dangerous and boisterous sea, 'which may be titled—"Death's Do-"minions;" many perishing therein, and 'not one on it being safe.'

As he was bewailing their fate, who he imagined had been cast away, he sees two men come down the rock, with each a bundle in his arm, who went to that which he had taken to be a chest; and, having put their load in it, pushed it away till come to deeper water: then, having got in it, with a long staff shoved it off, till they could row to a long-boat that lay at some distance behind a jetting part of the rock, which screened it from his sight, as also the ship it belonged to.

The sight of this much amazed him, and made him cease condoling others supposed loss, to run home and examine his own; well knowing those bundles he saw carried away, must needs belong to him; there being no other moveables in the island but what were in his lodge.

Being come home, he finds indeed what he suspected: those villains had most sacrilegiously rifled and ransacked his habitation, not leaving him so much as one of the mats to keep his poor body from the ground. His winter garb also is gone, and what else they could find for their use.

The loss of those things, which he could not be without, filled him with sorrow. 'Now,' said he, 'I am in my first 'state of being; naked I came into the 'world, and naked I shall go out of it:' at which he fell a weeping.

Having grieved a while—'Why,' said he, 'should I thus cast myself down? Is 'not Providence, who gave me them, 'able to give me more?' Thus, having resolved before winter to replenish his loss, he rests himself contented, and gives the ruffians evil action the best construction he could. 'Now I think on it,' said he, 'these surely are the men, who, about 'twelve months since, would charitably 'have carried me hence, but could not, 'for want of necessary implements; and 'now, being better provided, came to 'accomplish their hospitable design; but, 'not finding me, supposing I was either 'dead or gone, took away what was here 'of no use: much good may what they 'have got do them, and may it be of as 'much use to them as it was to me.' Thus walks out in order to cut grass to dry, and make himself new bedding, and a winter-garb.

Having walked about half a mile, he perceives the same men coming towards the pond. 'Heaven be praised!' said he, 'here they be still. Now, when they see 'I am not gone, nor willing to go, they 'will return my things, which they are 'sensible I cannot do without;' with which words he goes up to them.

By this time they had caught the two old ducks, which, being pinioned, could not fly away as the rest did. He was much vexed to see the best of his flock thus taken away; yet as he thought they were come to do him service, he could grudge them nothing, that would any wise gratify so good an intent. But having returned them thanks for their good-will, he told them he was very happy in the island, and had made a vow never to go out of it.

These being Frenchmen, and of an employment where politeness is of little use, being fishermen, and not understanding what he said, only laughed in his face, and went on to the purpose they came about: then having as many

of

of the ducks as they could get, they proceeded towards the house where they had seen the antelopes; some of which not running away at their approach, they proposed to catch hold of them.

Being come to the place where they used to feed, which was near the dwelling, the young ones, not being used to to see any men in cloaths, nor any body but their master, presently fled; but the two old ones, which he had bred up, were so tame, that they stood still; only when the men came to them, they kept close to him, which gave the men opportunity to lay hold of them; when, notwithstanding Quarll's repeated intreaties, they tied a halter about their horns, and barbarously led them away.

Quarll was grieved to the heart to see his darlings, which he had taken such care to breed up, and which were become the principal part of his delight, following him up and down; and which, by their jumping and playing before him, often dispersed melancholy thoughts; notwithstanding all these endearing qualifications, thus hauled away; he weeps, and on his knees begs they may be left; and, though they understood not his words, his actions were so expressive and moving, that had they had the humanity of canibals, who eat one another, they would have yielded to so melting an object as the poor broken-hearted Quarll was; but the inflexible boors went on, cruelly hauling and dragging the poor creatures; which, as if sensible of the barbarity of the act, looked back to their afflicted master, as craving his assistance; which at last, so exasperated him, that he was several times tempted to lay on the ravishers with his long staff; but as often was stopped by the following consideration. 'Shall I,' said he, 'be the destruction of my fellow-creatures, to rescue out of their hands animals of which I have an improving store left, and deprive them of their healths, and perhaps of their lives, to recover what cost me nought? Let them go with what they have, and the merit of their deed be their reward.' Thus he walks about melancholy, bemoaning his poor antelopes fate, and his own misfortune: 'They were used to liberty,' said he, 'which they now are deprived of, and for which they will pine and die, which, for their sake, I cannot but wish; for life without liberty is a continual death.'

As he was walking, thinking (as it is usual, after the loss of any thing one loves) of the pleasure he had during the enjoyment, the ruffians, having secured the poor animals, came back with ropes in their hands. 'What do they want next?' said he, 'have they not all they desire; would they carry away my habitation also? Sure they have no design on my person: if so, they will not take it so easily as they did my dear antelopes.' Thus he resolved to exercise his quarter-staff, if they offered to lay hands on him. The villains, whose design was to bind him, and so carry him away, seeing him armed and resolute, did not judge it safe for them to advance within the reach of his weapon, but keep at some distance, divining how to seize him.

Quarll, who, by their consulting, guessed at their design, not thinking proper to let them come to a resolution, makes at the nearest, who immediately takes to his heels; and then to the next, who immediately does the same. Thus he follows them about for a considerable time: but they divided, in order to tire him with running, till the night approaching, and the wind rising, made them fear their retreat might be dangerous, if they deferred it; so that they went clear away: which being all he desired, he returned, as soon as he saw them in the long-boat, that they rowed to their ship, which lay at anchor some distance from the rocks.

These wretches being gone, he returns Heaven thanks for his deliverance; and as his bridge favoured their coming, he pulls it off, and only laid it over when he had a mind to view the sea, and goes home to eat a bit, having not as yet broken his fast. Having, therefore, eaten some of his roots and cheese, and being wearied with hunting these boors, he consults how to lie, his bed and bedding being gone, as also his winter-gown, and the nights being, as yet, cold: however, after a small time of consideration, he concludes to lie in the lodge, which was left vacant by the stolen antelopes absence; whose litter being made of the same grass as his mats were, he lay both soft and warm.

When

When laid down, being sorely fatigued, he soon fell asleep; and as the plunderers had the proceeding day took up his cares, they filled his mind in the night; he has them continually before his eyes, sometimes with his beloved antelopes in their pilfering hands; at other times barbarously hauling them by their horns with a halter, which they ought to have about their own necks. These acts of authority provoking his anger, and urging him on to revenge, he lifts his staff, which on a sudden is turned into Hercules's club. Startled to see that wonderful change, he stops from laying on the intended blow: 'Refusing,' said he, 'my darling animals, I shall lose 'my precious and inestimable peace of 'mind. What can atone for the life of 'a man?' Whilst he was making these reflections, the men got clear away with the fowls and antelopes, leaving him in deep melancholy. Thus, as he was bewailing his loss, calling to mind the agreeable pastimes they had often been to him, and the many anxious hours he had dispersed with their diversion, a gentlewoman appeared before him, of a most agreeable, yet grave countenance, dressed in plain dove-coloured cloaths, in most places threadbare, and in others patched with divers sorts of stuffs, yet genteel and becoming. He starts at her appearing, wondering what she could come for, having nothing more to lose. 'I come not,' said she, 'to seek ought 'from thee, but to restore what thou 'hast lost.' He, being overjoyed at the words, looks about, expecting his beloved antelopes, and what else the men had taken away; but, seeing nothing, he thought that vision proceeded from vapours, which the great grief for his late loss had occasioned; and falls a thinking, till he was a second time interrupted by her, bidding him look her in the face. 'Be satisfied, be satisfied, 'woman,' said he: 'why, I neither 'know thee, nor what thou meanest.'— 'Well then,' replied she, 'I'll inform 'thee of both: I am Patience, whom all 'the world strive to grieve, and whom 'none can provoke; and what I promise 'to restore thee is Content, which thou 'throwest away after worthless things.' So she vanishes. At which he awakes.

Having made reflections upon the latter part of his dream, the first part thereof being but a repetition of what happened the day before, he makes this application. 'This,' said he, 'is a 'check for my discomposing that peace 'upon such a frivolous account, which 'by Providence was intended I should 'enjoy, having supplied me with all ne-'cessaries to maintain it.' He therefore makes a resolution never to be vexed, let what will happen; but with patience submit to the will of God, who has the direction of all things. Then, having paid his usual devotion, he goes into the kitchen, in order to breakfast, and afterwards to take his customary walk. Whilst he was eating, there arose a noise in the air, as proceeding from a quantity of rooks, jackdaws, crows, and such like birds, whose common notes he was acquainted with; and as the noise approached, he had the curiosity to go and see what was the matter, but was prevented by the coming of a large fowl, which flew over his head, as he was going out. He turned back to gaze at the bird, whose beauty seized him with admiration; the pleasure of seeing so charming a creature quite put out of his mind the curiosity of looking from whence proceeded the disagreeable noise without; which ceasing as soon as the bird was sheltered, made him imagine those carrion birds had been chasing that beautiful fowl, which, seeing itself out of danger, stood still, very calm and composed; which gave him the opportunity of making a discussion of every individual agreement which composed so delightful an object. It was about the bigness and form of a swan, almost headed like it, only the bill was not so long, nor so broad, and red like coral; his eyes like those of a hawk, his head of a mazarine blue, and on the top of it a tuft of shining gold-coloured feathers, which spread over it, hanging near three inches beyond, all round; it's breast, face, and part of it's neck, milk-white, curiously speckled with small black spots, a gold-coloured circle about it; it's back and neck behind of a fine crimson, speckled with purple; it's legs and feet the same colour as it's bill; it's tail long and round, spreading like that of a peacock, composed of six rows of feathers, all of different colours, which made a most delightful mixture.

Having spent several minutes in admiring the bird, he lays peas, and crumbled roots, both roasted and boiled, before it; as also, water in a shell, withdrawing, to give it liberty to eat and

drink;

drink; and stood out peeping to see what it would do: which, being alone, having looked about, picks a few peas, and drinks heartily; then walks towards the door, in a composed and easy manner, much like that of a cock.

Quarll, being at the outside, was dubious whether he should detain him, or let him go; his affection for that admirable creature equally prompts him to both: he cannot bear the thoughts of parting with so lovely an object, nor harbour that of depriving it of it's liberty, which it so implicitly intrusted him withal. Thus, after a small pause, generosity prevails over self-pleasure. 'Why should I,' said he, 'make the 'place of it's refuge it's prison?' He therefore makes room for it to go, which, with a slow pace, walks out; and having looked about a small time, mounts up a considerable height, and then takes it's course north-west.

The bird being gone out of sight, he made reflections on the adventure, which he judges to be a prognostic of some rebellion or revolution in Europe: whereupon, having recommended his native country to the protection of Heaven, begging a continuation of peace, and an end of those unhappy divisions, which often prove the ruin of nations, he goes and sets down, in the memorial-book, the transactions of that year, being 1689, and the 15th since his being in the island, which proved more fruitful in events than any of the preceding. The picture which he had drawn of the terrible sea-monster, being against his wall, having accustomed him to the frightful object that constantly disturbed his mind, he draws that of the two ruffians, committing their barbarity, and hangs it by the place; the idea whereof being to him more terrible than the preceding, he could not suffer it to be long in his sight; but takes it down, and draws on the backside of it, the villains on a gibbet. 'Now,' said he, 'this being what ought 'to be the end and explanation of the 'history, shall now be the right side of 'the picture.'

The rhe happening nothing the remainder of the year, worthy of record, he employs it in his customary occupations; as pruning and watering his bodge and dairy, making his mats to lie on, as also his winter-garb; every day milking his antelopes and goats; making now and then butter and cheese, attending his nets, and such like necessary employments.

The mean time, the French mariners, who probably got money by what they had taken from him the year before, returned, it being much about the same season; and being resolved to take him away, and all they could make any thing of, out of the island, were provided with hands and implements to accomplish their design; as ropes to bind what they could get alive, and guns to shoot what they could not come at; saws and hatchets to cut down logwood and brazil, pick-axes and shovels to dig up orris-roots, and others of worth, which they imagined the island produced; likewise flat-bottomed boats to tow in shallow water, where others could not come; and thus by degrees to load their ships with booty. But ever-watchful Providence blasted their evil projects, and confounded their devices, at the very instant they thought themselves sure of success. The implements in a flat-bottomed boat were towed to the very foot of the rock, by a young fellow, who being lighter than a man, was thought fittest to go with the tools, which pretty well loaded the boat.

Their materials being landed, to their great satisfaction, the men on board embarked in two more of the same sort of boats; but were no sooner in them, but a storm arose, which dashed their slender bottom to pieces, and washed them into the sea, in which they perished, overletting also the flat-bottomed boat on shore, with the lord, and the lad underneath it.

The storm being over, which lasted from about eight in the morning till almost twelve at noon, Quarll, according to his custom, went to see if he could perceive any damage done by the late tempest, and if any, distressed by it, stood in want of help.

Being at that side of the rock he used to visit, he could see nothing but a few fishes and shells the sea had left in the clifts. 'If this,' said he, 'be all the 'damage that has been done, make me 'thankful; it will recruit me with fresh 'fish and utensils.' Going to the N. W. part, where he sees a battered boat, floating with the keel upwards—'This,' said he, 'bodes some mischief;' but thought it not to be of any consequence. Having gone about fifty yards farther, he espies a small barrel at the foot of the rock,

took, with several planks and fragments of a ship, floating with the tide. 'Alas,' said he, 'these are too evident proofs of 'a shipwreck, to hope otherwise.' As he was looking about, he hears a voice cry out, much like that of a man, at some distance, behind a part of the rock. Being a matter of small moment, he soon knew what he was—'Heaven be praised!' says he, 'there is somebody whom I 'am luckily come to save, and be most 'fortunately come to be my companion: 'I cannot but resolve at the event, 'though I heartily grieve for the acci-'dent.' Hastening to the place where he thought the cries came from, which, as he advanced, he could discern to be too small for a man's voice—'Certain-'ly,' says he, 'this must be some wo-'man by the noise.' This stirs his blood a-glowing; his heart alters it's motion: 'Now,' said he, joyful, 'Providence 'has completed my happiness; I shall 'have a companion, and a help-mate;' and goes on with more vigour, as though he had recovered his strength, and got new kindled fire. Through and through rock, which was before, in a manner, inacceſ-ſible, is now made easy to walk: he draws the tackled planks with activity, and presently throws a rumbly, and soon arrived where he judged the person to be; yet, seeing nothing but what he took to be a chest, began to be different-ed. 'Stay,' said he, 'this is not a 'time to dream, to decoy my fancy 'after what is not to be had.' Thus his joy is straightway turned into a deep melan-choly; but the creature underneath, who, having heard some noise near at hand, ceased crying, to listen; yet, see-ing nobody near, cries out again some-what louder than before.

This revived him quite, and rectified his part: 'It is a woman,' said he, 'and in that chest;' when, going to break it open, he stops on a sudden: 'What am I going to do? How do I 'know the cause of her being thus lock-'ed up? Though women are, in a man-'ner, become a merchandize, yet they 'never are locked up or chested: she 'must be in there for a punishment, 'which in some countries is inflicted on 'witches.' The boy, who heard a voice, calls out in French, which Quaill not understanding, he was afraid to let him out; but his mentioning Christ being intelligible to him, made him change his opinion. 'For Christ's sake, doth 'she cry? That holy name witches fel-'dom make use of; however, in that 'name I'll let her out. If she be under 'condemnation, was I not so? Had the 'by Heaven been decreed to die, she 'would not have been here.' At which words, with his staff he endeavoured to break that which he took to be the lid of the chest, but proved to be the bottom; and, as he was striking, the boy under-neath, calling to him to turn it up, thrust his hand under the side, which he per-ceiving, though he understood him not, stood still. Finding his mistake—'This,' said he, 'is a flat-bottomed boat, such 'as the Frenchmen used the year before, 'when they came and plundered me. 'Now, am I safe, if I turn it up? 'Doubtless they are come in great num-'bers.' Pausing awhile, and the lad (whom he took to be a woman) still continuing his moan, he was moved to compassion; and, having considered the boat could not hold any great number, he ventures. 'Let what will come on 'it, or who will be under, for the poor 'woman's sake I'll relieve them; there 'cannot be many men. However, I'll 'let but one out at a time: if he be 'mischievous, I am able to deal with 'him.' At this, he puts the end of the staff where he had seen the hand, and lifts it up about a foot from the ground: out of the opening immediately creeps the boy, who on his knees falls begging and weeping, expecting death every mo-ment, as being the merited punishment for the evil purpose he came about. Quaill, who expected there was a woman besides, fearing the gap the youth came out at would be too uneasy for her to come through, made motions for the boy to help him, in order to let the boat on it's bottom; which he did. Quaill, seeing the implements indeed of the women, was as much vexed as disappointed. His countenance changes; sometimes he looks at the things, and then at the boy; who seeing him appear angry, thought of no-thing but present death, and again falls on his knees, holding up his hands, al-most drowned in tears, begging for mercy in such a moving manner, that Quaill could not forbear shedding some tears; and though the late disappointment of his proposed happiness, and the sight of the preparations made for his intended ruin, had moved him to anger against that mercenary nation, he helped the young fellow up by the hand; and the

night coming on apace, he takes one of the hatchets that lay by, and gave another to the boy, than falls a knocking the boat to pieces, and directed him to do the same; which he accordingly did.

The boat being demolished, they carried the boards higher up on the rock, as also the rest of the things; left, in the night, some storm should rise, which might wash them back into the sea, it being then too late to bring them away. Having done, they each of them took up what they could carry, and so went home. The young Frenchman, finding a kinder treatment than either he deserved or expected, was extraordinarily submissive and tractable, which made Quarll the more kind and mild; and, instead of condemning his evil attempt, he commiserated his misfortune, and in room of resentment shewed him kindness. Thus, having given him of what he had to eat, he puts him to bed in his lodge, where in he lay, till he had got his mats made up; then went to bed himself, but could not sleep for thinking of his late disappointment, which intercepted those pleasures he so much depended on, thinking himself sure of a female partner, who, in sharing happiness with him, would have much added to his bliss.

Having tossed and tumbled a considerable time, he begins to be heavy spirited; nature is fatigued, and must be refreshed. Thus he falls asleep; and, as his hopes the preceding day had indulged his desire, his mind is so impressed in the night with the idea of a female object, that he dreams he has her by his side, condoling her for the dangers she has gone through, congratulating her lucky escape, and greeting her happy arrival into so blessed an abode.

Thus expressing his joy, in possessing the only object which could complete his happiness, with all the softness and eloquence the most passionate love can inspire, he reaches out his arms to embrace the lovely phantom his inclination had bred in his imagination; but, having groped awhile, and finding nothing, he start out of his sleep at this most shocking disappointment.

Being awaked, the late delusive pleasures called to his mind the real, which he had formerly enjoyed, and which he did then hanker after: 'What is man,' said he, 'without that part of himself, 'out of which God made him a mate? 'Adam, though possessing all the world, 'was still wanting, till he had a woman 'to keep him company.' In this melancholy disposition he again falls asleep, and dreams afresh; in which his imagination gluts his inclination with those pleasures it so much desired. Fruition, to him, is but like liquor to a man sick of a violent fever, which only for a minute quenches his heat, but augments the distemper, and at last destroys the patient. Excessive love is but short-lived; what is violent is not lasting: time with pleasure runs fast away, but dwells long with sorrow; cares weaken love, and indifferences breed discontent; the jarrings follow, which introduce Division, the mother of Poverty.

These dismal accidents, incident to inconsiderate love, coming into the amorous dreamer's mind, his great heat being quenched, he took time to consider his condition; and, seeing himself liable to them, is struck with such a fear, as blots all pleasures out of his thoughts, and fills them with dread of future cares, which he unadvisedly run himself into, and all for the sake of a short pleasure.

Starting out of his sleep at the approach of those sad troubles, he returns Heaven thanks that it was but a dream; and begs pardon for having given so much way to the concupiscence of the flesh, getting up, though sooner than ordinary, lest he should fall asleep, and dream again of women.

Having walked about till he thought it time for the boy to rise, he calls him up, and takes him to the place that he usually went every morning and evening to sing psalms; where the youth being come, and hearing so many different voices, and seeing nobody, was scared out of his wits, and took to his heels, making towards the rock as fast as he could, but as he was not acquainted with the exact and most practicable parts thereof, Quarll had made an end of his psalm, and overtook him before he could get to the sea-side, into which he certainly would have cast himself, at the sight: but Quarll, who, by the boy's flying, guessed his disorder, not having the hands of the language, endeavoured to calm him by his pleasing countenance, and prevented his drowning himself; but could not keep off a violent fit the fright had occasioned, which held him several minutes.

The fit being over, he and the boy took away at divers times the remains of the

the chest, and of what was in it, which they could not carry home the day before. Then taking up two guns—'Now,' said he, 'these unlucky instruments, which were intended for destruction, shall be employed for the preservation of that they were to destroy.' Taking them to his lodge, he sets them at each side of the door; then it being dinner-time, he strikes a light, and sets the boy to make a fire, whilst he made some of the fish fit to fry, which he picked up upon the rock the evening before; then takes dripping, he saved when he roasted any flesh, to fry with them. The boy, who had lived some time in Holland, where they used much butter, seeing dripping employed in room thereof, thought to please his master in making some; and as he had seen, milk and cream in the dairy arbour, wanting a churn only, there being a small runlet lying by empty, he takes one of the ends of it, in which, the next day, he beat butter.

Quarll, seeing the youth industrious, begins to fancy him, notwithstanding the aversion he had conceived for his nation, ever since the ill treatment he had received from his countrymen; and, as speech is one of the most necessary faculties to breed and maintain fellowship, he took pains to teach him English.

The lad, being acute and ingenious, was soon made to understand it, and in six months capable to speak it sufficiently, so as to give his master a relation of his late coming, and to what intent. 'The men,' said he, 'who about one year since carried away from hence some antelopes, with extraordinary ducks, and several rarities, which they said belonged to a monstrous English hermit, whose hair and beard covered all his body, having got a great deal of money by shewing them, encouraged others to come; whereupon several, joining together, hired a ship to fetch away the hermit, and what else they could find; therefore brought with them tools, and guns, to shoot what they could not take alive.'—'Barbarous wretches!' replied he, 'to kill my dear antelopes and ducks! Pray, what did they intend to do with me?'—'Why,' said the boy, 'to make a shew of you.'—'To make a shew of me! Sordid wretches! Is a Christian then such a rarity amongst them? Well, and what were the saws and hatchets for?'—'To cut down your house, which they intended to make a drinking booth of.'—'Ho, monstrous! what time and nature has been fifteen years a compleating, they would have ruined in a moment: well, thanks to Providence, their evil design is averted. Pray, what is become of those sacrilegious persons?'—'They are all drowned,' said the boy. 'Then,' replies he, 'the Heavens are satisfied, and I avenged. But how camest thou to escape? for thou wast with them.'—'No,' replied the youth, 'I was upon the rock when their boat was dashed against it, and was overset with the same sea, under the flat-bottomed boat, where you found me.'—'That was a happy overset for thee. Well, is there no gratitude due to Providence for thy escape?'—'Due to Providence!' said he; 'why, I thought you had saved me: I'm sure you let me out.'—'Yes,' replied Quarll; 'but I was sent by Providence for that purpose.'—'That was kindly done too,' said the boy: 'well, when I see him, I will thank him: doth he live hereabout?'—'Poor ignorant creature!' replied Quarll; 'why Providence is every where. What! didst thou never hear of Providence? What religion art thou?'—'Religion!' answered the youth; 'I don't know what you mean: I am a fisherman by trade, which my father lived by.'—'Well,' said Quarll, 'did he teach thee nothing else? no prayers?'—'Prayers!' replied the lad: 'why, fishermen have no time to pray; that's for them who have nothing else to do: poor folks must work, and get money; that's the way of our town.'—'Covetous wretches! Well,' said he, 'I grudge them not what they possess, since it is all the happiness they aspire at; but thou shalt learn to pray, which will be of far more advantage to thee than work, both here and hereafter.' From which time he begins to teach him the Lord's Prayer, and the Ten Commandments; as also the principles of the Christian religion; all which instructions the youth taking readily, won his affection the more. He likewise taught him to sing psalms, which further qualified him to be his companion in spiritual exercises, as well as in temporal occupations.

Now, having company, he is obliged to enlarge his bed, the lodge being wanting for his antelopes against breeding-time: he adds, therefore, to his mats.

His other provisions also wanting to be augmented, and he having both tools and boards, out of the flat boat which he had taken to pieces, he and the lad went about making large boxes to salt flesh and fish in; then, with the boards that were left, they made a table for his dwelling that he had before, and one for his kitchen; as also shelves in the room of those that were made of wicker: then, having recruited his shell-utensils that were stolen the year before, he was completely furnished with all manner of conveniencies; and, Providence supplying him daily with other necessaries, there was no room left him for wishes, but for thanksgiving, which they daily most religiously paid.

In this most happy state they lived in peace and concord the space of ten years, unanimously doing what was to be done, as it lay in each of their ways, without relying on one another.

Quarll, who before, though alone and deprived of society, (the principal comfort of life) thought himself blest, now cannot express his happiness, there being none in the world to be compared to it, heartily praying he might find no alteration till death: but the young man, not having met with so many disappointments in the world as he, had not quite withdrawn his affection from it; his mind sometimes will run upon his native country, where he has left his relations, and where he cannot help wishing to be himself: thus, opportunity offering itself one day, as he went to get oysters, to make sauce for some fresh cod-fish which Quarll was dressing, he saw, at a distance, a ship, at which his heart fell a panting; his pulses double their motion; his blood grows warmer and warmer; till at last, inflamed with desire of getting at it, he lays down the bag he brought to put the oysters in, as also the instrument to dredge them up with, and takes to swimming. The men on board having espied him out, sent their boat to take him up; so he went away without taking his leave of him he had received so much good from; who, having waited a considerable time, fearing some accident would befal him, leaves his cooking, and goes to see for him; and, being come at the place where he was to get the oysters, he sees the bag and instruments lie and nobody with them. Having called several times without being answered, various racking fears tortured his mind: sometimes he doubts he is fallen in some hole in the rock, there being many near that place where the oysters were; he therefore with his staff, which he always carried with him when he went abroad, at the other side of the rock grabbled in every one round the place; and, feeling nothing, he concludes some sea-monster had stolen him away, and, weeping, condemns himself as the cause of this fatal accident; resolving, for the future, to punish himself by denying his appetite; and only eat to support nature, and not to please his palate.

Having given over hopes of getting him again, he returns home in the greatest affliction, resolving to sail till that time the next day; but happening to look westward, in which was the point the wind stood, he perceives something like a boat at a great distance; wiping the tears off his eyes, and looking steadfastly, he discovers a sail beyond it, which quite altered the nature of his former fear: 'No monster,' said he, 'hath devoured 'him; it is too plain a case, that he 'hath villainously left me: but what 'could I expect of his son, who had 'projected such evil against me?' So saying, he went home, and made an end of dressing his dinner; and afterwards hangs up the picture which he had taken down upon his account, being the true emblem of what he deserved; resting himself contented, being but as he was before, and rather better; since he had more conveniencies, and tools to till his ground, and dig up his roots with. Having recommended himself to Providence, he resumes his useful works and recreations, resolving that no cares shall mar his happiness for the future, being out of all those irresistible temptations way, in which the world abounds, and daily lays the best men's hopes in the dust.

Being again alone, the whole business of the house lies upon his hands; he now must prune and trim his habitation, that daily harbours him, being made of fine growing plants, which yearly shoot out young branches: this makes them grow out of shape. He must also till the ground; set and gather his pease and beans in their season; milk and feed his antelopes daily; make butter and cheese at proper times; dig up his roots; fetch in fuel and water when wanted; attend his nets; go eagle-nesting; and every day dress his own victuals: all which necessary occupations,

occupations, beſides the time dedicated for morning and evening devotions, kept him wholly employed; which made his renewed ſolitude leſs irkſome. And, having walked all that afternoon to divert his thoughts, admired all the way the wonderful works of Nature, both in the ſurpriſing rocks which ſurrounded the iſland, and in the delightful creatures, and admirable plants, that are in it. Being weary with walking, he returns home, thanking kind Providence for ſettling him in ſo bleſſed a place; and in his way calls at his invisible choir; where, having ſung a thankſgiving pſalm, and his uſual evening hymn, he goes to ſupper, and then to bed, with a thoroughly contented mind; which occaſions pleaſant dreams, to entertain his thoughts.

During his ſleep, his fancy is delighted with being in Nature's garden of pleaſure, where none but her friends are permitted to enter.

The place appeared very ſpacious, and of an admirable form; full of all ſorts of Nature's works, both animals, vegetables, and minerals, every individual thing in perfection: and though ſome were diſtant, yet all appeared as at hand.

The lofty trees, which ſtood on a level ground, covered with curious graſs, embalmed with many different-coloured flowers, exceeding in beauty any carpet that the moſt expert artiſt could make, ſpread their branchy arms over creatures of all kinds, which lay beneath their delightful ſhades: there the bold lion lies by the innocent lamb; the fierce panther near the harmleſs ſheep; the ravenous wolf with the mild goat; leopard and deer, tyger and hare, repoſed together in peace; on the trees, eagles, vultures, falcons, and hawks, quietly perched with the turtle and the dove.

Theſe moſt agreeable objects, joined with the delightful noiſe of the fountains falling into their baſons, and the purling ſtreams running their courſe, together with the various harmonious notes of divers kinds of ſinging-birds, put him into an ecſtacy: 'Sure,' ſaid he, 'this 'is the garden of Eden, out of which 'unfortunate Adam was caſt after his 'fall, as being a dwelling only for in-'nocence!'

Having walked a little way, there being on every ſide curious lanes, every one affording new objects of admiration, he comes to a walk, edged with orange and lemon-trees, full of fruit and bloſſoms, at the foot of which was a narrow bank bordered with jonquils, tuberoſes, hyacinths, and other delightful flowers, both for ſight and ſmell. At the end of it there was an arbour of the ſame, but ſo beautiful, that, at firſt ſight, he took it for a tapeſtry the moſt expert artiſt had exerted himſelf in making, to ſhew the curioſity of trade, and greatneſs of his ſkill: in it there ſat three ladies of uncommon beauty; the middlemoſt, who was the luſtieſt, appeared to be the eldeſt, being of a moſt ſedate countenance, a moderate number of years having both eſtabliſhed her judgment, and ſettled her features: ſhe, at her right-hand, ſeemed to be of a weaker conſtitution; ſhe had in her hand an olive-branch bearing fruit, which, when gathered, was immediately ſucceeded with bloſſoms; ſo that it never was without the one or the other: the lady who ſat on the left-ſide was more jolly and gay, yet looked ſomewhat careful: ſhe had in her hand a long veſſel, broad at one end, and ſharp at the other, like a horn, bending towards the point, full of all ſorts of fruits.

Having ſtood ſtill a ſhort ſpace of time, looking at thoſe ladies, thinking it ill manners to interrupt their converſation; they, perceiving his modeſty, would not permit him to advance, roſe up, and went another way, to give him the opportunity of viewing the garden: he accordingly went quite round, till come to the place where he had begun his walk; where he ſaw a ſtately cock of an extraordinary ſize, ſtrutting from animal to animal, taking from moſt of them ſomething whilſt they were aſleep; which having ſecured, he falls a crowing in ſuch a loud manner, that he ſtartled all the other creatures; which, being awake, and every one miſſing ſomething, challenged him with it: but he, having crowed a ſecond time in an inſulting and daring manner, ſtrutted moſt haughtily away; at which the loſers, being much offended, conſulted together on means to retake by force what he had in ſo clandeſtine a manner taken from them, chuſing the lion for their director; but the watchful cock, which, whilſt they were indulging themſelves, carefully made ſufficient proviſion to maintain what he had done, bid them all defiance.

There happening a great noiſe of ſqueeling,

ſqueeling, it waked him out of his dream; and his mind being impreſſed with notions of war, it at firſt ſeized him with terror: but being ſomewhat ſettled, and the noiſe ſtill continuing, he perceived it proceeded from the two different kinds of monkeys in the iſland, which were fighting for the wild pomegranates that the high wind had ſhook off the trees the preceding night, which was very boiſterous.

Having gueſſed the occaſion of their debate, he gets up, in order to go and quell their difference, by dividing amongſt them the cauſe thereof: getting up, he opens the door; at the outſide of which, an old monkey of each ſort were quietly waiting his levee, to entice him to come, as he once before did, and put an end to their bloody war.

He was not a little ſurprized to ſee two ſuch inveterate enemies, who at other times never meet without fighting, at that juncture agree ſo well.

That moſt ſurpriſing ſign of reaſon in thoſe brutes, which, knowing his deciſion would compoſe their comrades difference, came to implore it, put him upon theſe reflections—'Would princes,' ſaid he, 'be but reaſonable, as thoſe which 'by nature are irrational, how much 'blood and money might be ſaved!' Having admired the uneaſineſs of thoſe poor creatures, which ſtill went a few ſteps forward, and then backward to him, he was in hopes to decoy one or both into his lodge, by throwing meat to them: but thoſe exemplary animals, hearing their fellows in trouble, had no regard to their ſeparate intereſt, taking no notice of what he gave them; but kept moving to-and-again with all the tokens of uneaſineſs they could expreſs; which ſo moved him, that he hattened to the place, where his preſence cauſed immediately a ceſſation of arms, and each party moved a conſiderable diſtance off each other, waiting his ſharing the windfalls; which being done, they quietly took that heap which lay next each kind, and went to their different quarters.

This accident, which in ſome manner made out his dream of wars, brought it alſo freſh into his mind, which was full of cares about his country, which he much feared, if any ſhould happen in Europe, would be involved therein; and calling to remembrance the indigent diſpoſition he left it in, he feared it would lay it open to ſome uſurping prince's power: but leſt farther ſpeculation ſhould occaſion evil prognoſtication to diſturb his peace, he leaves the event of all things to the direction of Providence, and goes home to ſet down his dream, and the year he dreamed it, which was in 1690.

Fourteen years more being paſt, every thing keeping it's natural courſe, there happened nothing extraordinary, each ſucceeding year renewing the pleaſures the preceding had produced: thunders and high winds being frequent, though not equally violent, he thought it not material to record them, or their effects; as blowing and throwing fiſhes, ſhells, empty veſſels, battered cheſts, &c. upon the rock; only tranſactions and events wonderful and uncommon: and there happened a moſt ſurpriſing one a few days after, which, though of no great moment, is as worthy of record as any of far greater concern; being a wonderful effect of Providence, manifeſted in a miraculous manner, though not to be ſaid ſupernatural.

One morning, when he had roaſted a parcel of thoſe roots which he uſed to eat inſtead of bread, and this he commonly did once a week, it eating beſt when ſtale; having ſpread them on his table cheſt to cool, he went out to walk, leaving his door open to let the air in.

His walk, though graced with all the agreeables nature could adorn it with, to make it delightful; a graſs carpet, embroidered with beautiful flowers, of many different colours and ſmells, under his feet, to tread on; before, and on each ſide of him, fine lofty trees, of various forms and heights, cloathed with pleaſant green leaves, trimmed with rich bloſſoms of many colours, to divert his eye; a number of various ſorts of melodious ſinging-birds perching in their moſt lovely ſhades, as though Nature had ſtudied to excel man's brighteſt imagination, and exquiſiteneſs of art: yet all theſe profuſeneſſes of Nature's wonders are not ſufficient to keep away or expel anxious thoughts from his mind. It runs upon his two dear antelopes, the darling heads of his preſent flock, which he took ſuch care to bring up, and were become ſo engaging, always attending him in thoſe fine walks; adding by their ſwift races, active leapings, and other uncommon diverſions, to the natural pleaſantneſs of the place; which now, by their moſt lamented abſence, is become a dull memorandum of the barbarous

barous manner in which they were ravished away from him.

In these melancholy thoughts, which his lonesomeness every now-and-then created, he returns home, where Providence had left a remedy for his grievance; a companion, far exceeding any he ever had, waits his return; which was, a beautiful monkey of the finest kind, and the most compleat of the sort, as though made to manifest the unparalleled skill of Nature, is sent him by Providence, to dissipate his melancholy.

Being come to his lodge, and beholding that wonderful creature, and in his own possession, at the farthest end of it, and him at the entrance thereof to oppose it's flight, if offered, he is at once filled with joy and admiration: 'Long,' said he, 'I endeavoured in vain to get one, and 'would have been glad of any, though 'of the worst kind, and even the meanest of the sort; and here kind Providence has sent me one of an unparalleled beauty.'

Having a considerable time admired the beast, which all the while stood unconcerned, now-and-then eating of the roots that lay before him, he shuts the door, and goes in, with a resolution of staying within all day, in order to tame him, which he hoped would be no difficult matter, his disposition being already pretty familiar, little thinking that Providence, who sent him thither, had already qualified him for the commission he bore; which having found out by the creature's surprising docility, he returns his Benefactor his most hearty thanks for that miraculous gift.

This most wonderful animal having, by it's surprising tractability, and good-nature, joined to it's matchless handsomeness, gained it's master's love, beyond what is usual to place on any sort of beasts; he thought himself doubly recompensed for all his former losses, especially for that of his late ungrateful companion, who, notwithstanding all the obligations he held from him, basely left him, at a time he might be most helpful: and, as he fancied his dear Beautidelle (for so he called that admirable creature) had some sort of resemblance to the picture he framed of him, he takes it down, thinking it unjust to bear in his sight that vile object, which could not in any-wise claim a likeness to so worthy a creature as his beloved monkey.

One day, as this lovely animal was officiating the charge it had of it's own accord taken, being gone for wood, as wont to do when wanted, he finds in his way a wild pomegranate, whose extraordinary size and weight had caused it to fall off the tree: he takes it home, and then returns for his faggot; in which time Quarll, wishing the goodness of the inside might answer it's outward beauty, cuts it open; and, finding it of a dull lusciousness, too flat for eating, imagined it might be used with things of an acid and sharp taste: having therefore boiled some water, he puts it into a vessel, with a sort of an herb which is of the taste and nature of cresses, and some of the pomegranate, letting them infuse some time, now-and-then stirring it; which the monkey having taken notice of, did the same: but one very hot day, happening to lay the vessel in the sun, made it turn sour.

Quarll, who very much wanted vinegar in his sauces, was well pleased with the accident, and so continued the souring the liquor, which proving excellent, he made a five gallon vessel of it, having several, which at times he found upon the rock.

Having now store of vinegar, and being a great lover of pickles, which he had learnt to make by seeing his last wife, who was an extraordinary cook, and made of all sorts every year; calling to mind he had often in his walks seen something like mushrooms, he makes it his business to look for some: thus he picked up a few, of which Beautidelle (who followed him up and down) having taken notice, immediately ranges about; and being nimbler footed than his master, and not obliged to stoop so low, picked double the quantity in the same space of time; so that he soon had enough to serve him till the next season.

His good success in making that sort of pickle, encourages him to try another; and having taken notice of a plant in the wood that bears a small green flower, which, before it is blown, looks like a caper, he gathers a few; and their taste and flavour being no way disagreeable, judging that, when pickled, they would be pleasant, he tries them, which, according to his mind, were full as good as the real ones, and gathers a sufficient quantity, with the help of his attendant; stocking himself with two as pleasant pickles as different sorts: but there is another which he admires above all;

none,

none, to his mind, like the cucumber; and the iſland producing none, left him no room to hope for any; yet (as likeneſs is a vaſt help to imagination) if he could but find any thing, which ever ſo little reſembles them in make, nature, or taſte, it will pleaſe his fancy: he therefore examines every kind of buds, bloſſoms, and ſeeds; having at laſt found that of a wild parſnep, which being long and narrow, almoſt the bigneſs and make of a pickling cucumber, green and criſp withal, full of a ſmall flat ſeed, not unlike that of the thing he would fain have it to be, he pickles ſome of them; which being of a colour, and near upon the make, he fancies them quite of the taſte.

His beans being at that time large enough for the firſt crop, he gathers ſome for his dinner. The huſks being tender and of a delicate green, it came into his mind, they might be made to imitate French beans. 'They are,' ſaid he, near 'the nature, I can make them quite 'of the ſhape, ſo be they have the ſame 'ſavour.' Accordingly he cuts them in long narrow ſlips, and pickles ſome; the other part he boils; and there being none to contradict their taſte, they paſſed current for as good French beans as any that ever grew.

The diſappointment of having ſomething more comfortable than water to drink being retrieved by producing, in the room thereof, wherewithal to make his eatables more delicious, he proceeds in his firſt proſpect; and, taking neceſſary care to prevent that accident which intercepted ſucceſs in his firſt undertaking, he accompliſhes his deſign, and makes a liquor no wiſe inferior to the beſt cyder: ſo that now he has both to revive and keep up his ſpirits, as well as to pleaſe his palate, and ſuit his appetite.

Having now nothing to crave or wiſh for, but rather all motives for content, he lies down with a peaceable mind, no care or fear diſturbing his thoughts: his ſleep is not interrupted with frightful fancies, but rather diverted with pleaſant and diverting dreams; he is not ſtartled at thunder or ſtorms, though ever ſo terrible, his truſt being on Providence, who at ſundry times, and in various manners, has reſcued him from death, though apparently unavoidable; being for above thirty years miraculouſly protected and maintained in a place ſo remote from all human help and aſſiſtance.

Yet, notwithſtanding his firmneſs, and whole truſt on Providence, he is obliged to give way to the weakneſs of his nature; a ſtrange and ſhocking noiſe is heard at a diſtance in the air, which, having reached the place where he ſtood, covers it with darkneſs for ſeveral minutes; at which he is ſo alarmed, that he thinks himſelf paſt all hopes; till the noiſe being ceaſed, and that which intercepted the light diſperſed, his ſcared ſenſes returning to their proper ſeat, and his ſtrayed reaſon recalled, he is aſhamed of the weakneſs of his faith, and begs pardon for his late miſtruſt of the continuation of Providence's protection, who had all along given him all imaginable reaſon to depend on it at all times. Thus, having opened his door, he ſteps out to ſee if he could diſcover the cauſe of the late moſt ſurpriſing and ſudden darkneſs, in a bright ſun-ſhining day; which having found out by the vaſt number of dead birds of ſeveral kinds, lying up and down the ground, he was ſeized with no ſmall amazement, though with leſs fear.

From that moſt ſurprizing effect he infers, there had been a battle of thoſe creatures in the air, the great number of which had occaſioned the late decreaſe.

Having made reflections upon that aſtoniſhing tranſaction, he can draw from thence no other inference, but a prognoſtication of dreadful wars in Europe, from which he begs Heaven to protect his native country: and left the dead birds, that lay in great numbers, ſhould (with lying) infect the iſland, he and his monkey carried them to the other ſide of the rock, throwing them into the ſea; only as many of them as had ſoft feathers on their breaſt and bellies, he plucked away, to ſtuff a pillow for the beaſt, being a little too hot at nights for it to lie upon the bed. So having cleared the place, and being tired with often going up and down the rugged rock, he ſtayed at home the remainder of the day, and at night goes to bed; but, as the late omen of approaching evil had pre-occupied his thoughts in the day with cares concerning his country, his mind ran upon it in the night; dreaming he ſees wives weeping, and melting into tears, taking their leaves of their indulgent huſbands; hanging, deſtitute of ſtrength, about their necks; whoſe grief weighed them to the ground. Turning

from

from that afflicting object, he sees another as shocking; the old father, bathed in tears, embracing his only son, bidding him farewel, and with him all the comforts of this life, and support of his age. Moving his eyes from that, they light on full as bad a sight; the tender mother swooning in her dear child's arms, whom an inexorable press-gang is hauling away. Thus every face expressing grief for a relation, or a friend, not being able any longer to behold those terrifying objects with which the town abounded, he betakes himself to the country; that, by keeping from the afflicted, he may avoid grief.

Having quitted the town, he finds himself on a sudden in a place as full of terrors, where he saw streams of reeking blood here and there; loose horses kicking and prancing about; some dragging their late riders by the stirrups; others wounded, and their guts hanging about; at a distance, crowds of men in flame and smoke, confusedly moving like heaps of dust in a whirlwind, leaving behind them, as they moved, vast numbers of men and horses, both dead and dying; some without legs, others without arms, and abundance with but one of each.

At a distance from thence, some in pursuit of their enemies, hacking and cutting them down all the way before them, like wood for fuel; others, flying from being slain, cast themselves into rapid rivers, where they perish by thousands.

As he was looking at those terrible objects, he finds himself on a sudden surrounded by rustical soldiers, holding their swords and bayonets to his breast, and asking him in a surly-manner, Whether *high* or *low?* At which being very much startled, not knowing what to answer, nor, indeed, what they meant, he told them he was an Englishman; which they appearing to be also, made him hope for better usage: but they, seizing him in a violent manner, said, he might be English, and yet an enemy to the country. Then he awaked in a wonderful fright; but, being come to himself, he concludes, that his dream proceeded from his late surprize at the preceding day's astonishing transactions; therefore having again recommended his country to Heaven's protection, he goes about making the bed for his monkey, as he had concluded on before, and with some sail-cloth makes a case, stuffing it with the feathers he had saved for that purpose.

The night being come, he lays the couching, which he made for the beast, by his own bed; which very readily went to it, being very soft and easy.

And, as cares for his country had in the day occupied his thoughts, his mind in the night is impressed with the subject, though not with so dismal an idea as the preceding; having since been diverted with such objects as removed the terrifying aspects, which before offered themselves to his imagination; which now is taken up with being in St. James's Park, where he had formerly taken pleasure, and which he fancies had since lost many of it's former agreeablenesses.

As he was walking, a report was raised, that a certain great person (who, by his late great services to the nation, had gained a title to the palace) was just deceased; having, before his death, entailed the same upon a foreign prince of great renown. This surprizing piece of news occasioned a sudden alteration in every body's countenance: some looked pale with grief, others red with wrath; but every thing in nature seemed to express a feeling for the loss; the trees shed half their virtues, and the grass withered.

This dull scene having lasted some small time, the trees and grass recover their former verdure, brighter than before; the lofty oaks, which he fancied bordered the Mall, bore fine roses in vast numbers.

This additional beauty in those noble plants, already so famed abroad for their toughness and strength, prompts people of all nations to come and refresh themselves under their lofty and fragrant shades.

Having with great satisfaction admired the surprizing improvement of the oaks, which, to his imagination, prognosticated prosperity to the nation, he walks on northward, where he saw abundance of thistles, which made him wonder they were permitted to grow in a place where every thing ought to contribute to it's agreeableness and pleasantness; but, having considered the stoutness of the plants, which denoted their being well-rooted, he judged it impossible to clear the ground; besides, the bees loving to settle on them, and probably sucking more honey from their blossoms than any more agreeable or sweet-scented flower; for that reason, he imagined they were not gathered.

Walking back again, he meets with several noblemen, some with a blue cordoon, others with green, each with a gardening-tool in his hand, going to turn up and till the ground, between that where the thistles grew, and that where the oaks stood: he was startled to see those great persons, who hardly will concern themselves with their own lands and possessions, labour to improve that wherein every private person had a share. He stood some time admiring their dexterity, and readiness at their work; then walks on to the Mall, which he found thronged with a multitude of people of all nations, every one having a rose in his hand, wherewith they diverted themselves as they walked.

Having gazed about him a considerable time, he had a fancy to go and see how the noble gardeners went on with their work; where being come, he finds, to his great admiration, the ground had been so wonderfully well manured, that the oaks and thistles had struck their roots through it, and met; so, growing together, had produced a plant which bore both roses and thistles, to every body's wonder; which made the thistles so valued ever since, that there are but few great or fine gardens, which have not more or less of them.

His monkey, being startled out of his sleep in a mighty fright, ran behind his back squeaking, and awaked him in the midst of his amazement; being exceedingly pleased with his late dream, of which he conceived a mighty good omen to Old England, differing so very much from the preceding, both in nature and signification.

Thus, though earlier than he usually rose, he gets up to set it down whilst fresh in his mind, and also the year, being 1707; then takes a walk before breakfast, and the beast with him; which, being not yet recovered of it's late fright, keeps close to his master, every now and then looking behind, as though still afraid; at which Quarll concludes the creature must needs have been disturbed in it's sleep the night before with some frightful dream, which made him wonder that an animal void of reason, and incapable of reflection, should be susceptible of imagination.

The day being passed without any extraordinary occurrence, he made no farther remark, but followed his usual occupation, and then went to his rest; and the monkey to his new bed, as the night before, which he took care to draw as close to his master as he could; then, having been twice or thrice about the room, examining every corner, he lies down, and sleeps quietly till the dawning of the morning; at which time he starts up again, as the night before.

Quarll, being a second time awaked in the same manner, and much about the same hour, concludes the cause must proceed from the pillow, and resolves to experiment it himself the next night; at which time crowds of terrifying aspects appear in his imagination, which allure his whole faculties, and set all his senses in an uproar; his eyes are taken up with frightful objects, and his ears filled with a terrible noise; at which the rest of his senses have lost their offices, and are become useless.

Being awake the next morning, he finds himself inclined to believe, that the pillow had really some influence on his imagination; but as one night's experience was not a sufficient solution to his enquiry in that supernatural operation, having often dreamed before he used the pillow, he resolves to try it several nights successively; during which his monkey slept very quiet, and he as disturbed. This works a great way towards the persuasion of what he had a strong fancy to believe: yet, to be better satisfied of the reality of it, he lays by the pillow for three or four nights together; during which time, both he and the beast slept very quiet.

This added much to his opinion, that evil effluvia issued out of those feathers the pillow was stuffed with; but as he formerly dreamed, and had many nights intermission between those that were entertained with dreams, he will once more try it, before he concludes that it is so; thus puts it again under his head that night: and, as it was the last experiment, it proved also the most troublesome, he being at that time terrified with more shocking objects than the preceding; which, though they represent fierce and bloody battles to his imagination, yet were less terrible to him; having not as yet discerned his native country engaged therein, whom now he finds to be the principal party concerned, on which all success depends, and which cannot be strove for without vast expences, and irretrievable loss of his dear countrymen; for whom his heart bled as plentifully

as

PAGINATION INCORRECT

as for those whom he dreamed he saw in their gore.

Having with terror and grief fatigued his eyes with the most shocking and afflicting effects of war, men and horses lying as thick upon the ground as grass in a meadow, and streams of blood running like so many brooks, supplied by a strong spring; he lifts up his eyes to heaven, imploring an end to that execrable devourer of mankind.

And whilst his eyes were still fixed to the heavens, he sees Victory rushing through thick clouds of obstacles approaching to her; which having overcome, she settled over the army his countrymen belonged to, over whose head she shook and flourished her colours, pointing at approaching Peace, attended with Plenty; but on a sudden there arose an infectious mist out of the ground, which cramping the Englishmen's hands, that they could no more use their conquering arms, this fatal accident having both encouraged and strengthened the enemy, they fell on the unfortunate remains of the army with unmerciful fury; who, now having lost all their support and dependance, were most cruelly cut to pieces; at which most dismal and afflicting object he awaked. And though this dream was a sufficient proof of the feathers influence, yet he cannot be satisfied but it must be ominous, having so much relation to the preceding; therefore sets it down with them; and, for a more certain conviction of what he had all cause imaginable to believe, he is resolved to try his monkey once more the night following: but the beast, who had not yet forgot the uneasiness that the bed had caused him, chose to lie on the ground; which entirely convinced Quarll, that there was a malignant quality in those feathers: wherefore he throws them into the sea, and fills the case with a sort of soft moss, which grew at the bottom of a particular tree, on which the creature lay very quiet ever after.

And as yearly stripping the eagles of their eggs had prevented their increase, it also favoured and advanced that of the creatures in the island, on whose young they fed; so that the number of the wild monkeys being considerably augmented, made their food scanty, which caused them now and then to come and steal somewhat out of Quarll's ground. Beaufidelle, whose good keeping and warm lying had made him thrive in bigness and strength exceeding his kind, finding some of them stealing his master's roots, beat them away; which obliged those subtle creatures to come several together, the better to be able to encounter him; which Quarll having taken notice of, and being willing to add a new sport to his usual diversions, cuts a stick of the length and bigness that the creature could manage, which he gave him; and taking his own staff, exercises it before him, which did the same with his; and, apprehending what use it was given him for, he had it often in his hands, and with it drove away the others, when they came, though ten or a dozen together; so that the roots were very well guarded by his continual watching, which made those sly and spiteful creatures watch an opportunity to take him at a disadvantage. Thus finding him one morning, as he was going for water by himself, as he was wont to do, and being then without his staff, of which they stood in great fear, a considerable number fell upon him, and so bit and beat him, that he lay as dead; but his master appearing, who, being uneasy at his extraordinary stay, was gone to see what was the occasion thereof, put them to flight; and they left the poor creature with just breath enough to keep it's life in, and scarce strength sufficient to draw it.

Quarll, being come to the place where his beloved Beaufidelle lay in a most dismal bloody condition, could not forbear shedding tears to see him thus miserably dying: but finding still breath in him, it gave him hopes of his recovery; and taking him up in his arms with all the care he could, he hastens home, and gives him a little of the liquor he had made, which by that time had got both body and spirit; then having laid him upon it's bed, and covered him with his winter-wrapper, he makes a fire and warms some of the said liquor, and fresh butter, wherewith he washes it's sores; so lays him down again, giving him all the careful attendance he could, during his illness, which held but one week, at the end of which he died, to his unspeakable grief; who, from that time, grew so melancholy, that he had not the courage to go on with his memorial; till having a most remarkable dream about twelve months after, he changed his resolution, and proceeded in his memoirs: and as he set

down his dream, he alſo did the death of his beloved beaſt, it happening near the ſame time.

Having ſpent the year but dully, for want of his diverting company at home; to put this as much out of his mind as he could, he walked the ſpare hours he had left from his uſual occupation. Thus being one day ſomewhat fatigued, having loſt his wonted alacrity, he ſat down under the next cluſter of trees he came at; and, being in a dull diſpoſition, was ſoon lulled aſleep, at a lonеſome note of a certain ſort of melancholy bird, which ſhuns others company (though of it's own kind) at all times but in breeding-time; which, having placed itſelf in the thickeſt and ſhadieſt part of the grove, where Quarll had made choice to lie, falls a ſinging his melancholy notes; which being ſuitable to his diſpoſition of both body and mind, ſoon lulled him aſleep; during which he dreamed, that he ſaw an old man ſitting in a large circle, around which all the ſigns of the zodiac were, and the old gentleman appeared extremely buſy, ſtringing of ſmall beads, ſome white, and ſome black; and when he had ſtrung a certain number, he began another ſtring, and ſo on. He had the curioſity to tell how many he put in a ſtring, ſo keeps an account of the next he did begin, and tells juſt ſixty. Having made as many of thoſe ſtrings as there were beads in each, he puts them together, and begins again to ſtring, mixing white and black as they came to his hand, twiſting every ſixtieth ſtring in parcels, till he had made ſixty of them, which he neatly plaits together, proceeding as from the beginning, and makes twenty-four of thoſe plaits, which he weaves together, making a flat piece of bead-work, changeable upon black, which, when looked upon one way, ſeemed pleaſant; and, being ſeen from another, as diſagreeable. He worked on till he had made three hundred and ſixty-four ſuch pieces, then lays them up in a bundle, and goes to work again, beginning to ſtring as at firſt.

Having looked himſelf weary with ſeeing ſtill the ſame, of which he could make nothing, he goes away, leaving the old gentleman ſtringing his beads; who, ſeeing him go, lays by his work, and follows him; and having overtaken him, aſked him, What he had been looking at all that time? He, being ſurprized at the ſurly queſtion, modeſtly replies, He had been admiring his work; in doing which, he hoped there was no offence. 'No,' ſaid the old man, 'provided thou learn-'eſt ſomething by what thou haſt ſeen.' To which he anſwered, It was impoſſible for him to learn ſuch a myſterious buſineſs, with once ſeeing it done; ſo much leſs, being entirely a ſtranger to it. 'A ſtranger to it art thou?' replied the old man, in a ſurly manner; 'and haſt 'waſted ſo much of my work! I am 'Time, whom thou haſt often ill uſed; 'and thoſe white and black beads, that 'thou haſt ſeen me ſtring, are good and 'bad moments, I croud into minutes, 'which I link into hours; thus weave 'days, wherewith years are compoſed. 'Thou haſt ſeen me compleat the pre-'ſent, which is reckoned the year 1713. 'I tell thee, before the enſuing is 'ended, I will grace the Britiſh throne 'with an illuſtrious race to the end of 'kings reigns;' ſo vaniſhed. Then he awaked in a great ſurpriſe, and goes home, pondering on his dream; of which he inferred, that if there be any ſignification in the roving conceptions of the mind, this muſt prognoſticate the ſpeedy acceſſion of ſome great monarch upon the Engliſh throne: ſo ſets down in his memorial that moſt remarkable dream, which happened in 1713, heartily wiſhing the accompliſhment thereof, for the quiet and proſperity of his dear country.

There happened nothing after, for the ſpace of four years, but great thunders and lightnings in the ſummer, and abundance of hail and ſnow in the winter, with now and then ſtorms, which left ſeveral ſorts of fiſhes in the clifts and holes of the rocks, and ſometimes fragments of ſtaved ſhips, and battered caſks, or broken cheſts, with a plank, and ſuch like products of ſhipwreck, not worth recording: by which means, for want of employment, he has ſeveral idle and ſullen hours in the day time, which his late beloved animal's diverting company made ſlip away with pleaſure, and for want of which they now creep ſlowly on; being loaded with dull and heavy thoughts, which made thoſe walks irkſome, he at that time took for eaſe; that by the diverſity of objects abroad, his mind might be withdrawn from his anxious ſolitude.

Having one day peruſed his memorial, as he commonly did once a year, the dream he had in 1713, wherein Time predicted

dicted such great happiness to his country the year ensuing, made such an impression in his mind, that he always thought of it. Accordingly, being walking, and the day proving extraordinarily hot, he goes to shelter himself in one of his natural groves; where having laid himself down on the grass, he was soon lulled asleep; during which, the idea he had conceived of his former dream represented to his imagination a most majestic and graceful monarch, sitting on a magnificent throne, round which stood many delightful olive-plants, which much added to his lustre.

Having, with a great deal of pleasure, gazed at the most graceful countenance of the king, which denoted justice, equity, love, and clemency; he gave Heaven thanks for the mighty blessing bestowed on his country, coming away in order to return to his island, with this additional happiness to the many he already enjoyed.

Being come from court, on his journey he meets the same old gentleman of whom he dreamed the year before: who, taking him by the hand, said—'I find 'thou hast been to see the accomplish-'ment of my prediction: now I will 'tell thee more:

'Ere one thousand seven hundred and sixty
'is written,
'All divisions, remember, will cease in
'Great Britain.

'Next, I will shew thee what I have 'done to secure the accomplishment of 'my prophecy.' Then takes him to a high place, from whence he could see into the cabinets of all the princes in Europe; in several of which, he took notice, lay a vast heap of rich and costly things, but confused, shapeless, and fit for no use: 'Now,' said the old man to him, 'these are disappointments, and defeat-'ed projects, made to intercept what I 'determined.' Then vanishes; at which he awaked, exceeding glad to find himself safe in his blessed island, and wonderfully pleased with his dream, which betokened so much good to his dear country. This was the conclusion of his records in 1724.

ED. DORRINGTON.

FINIS.